

Respiration in Plants



WALTER STILES

M.A., SC.D., F.L.S., F.R.S.

*Emeritus Professor of Botany
in the University of Birmingham*

AND

WILLIAM LEACH

D.S.C., F.R.S.C.

*Formerly Professor of Botany
in the University of Manitoba*

LONDON: METHUEN & CO LTD
NEW YORK: JOHN WILEY & SONS, INC

First Published April 29th 1932
Second Edition, Revised, July 1936
Third Edition, Revised, 1952
Fourth Edition, Revised, 1960

Printed in Great Britain
by Butler & Tanner Ltd
Frome & London

4.1

Cat. No. (Methuen) 2/4113/11

Contents

I INTRODUCTORY	<i>page</i> 1
II RESPIRATION OF NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS	15
III ANAEROBIC RESPIRATION	72
IV THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION	95
LITERATURE CITED IN THE TEXT	180
INDEX	210

Preface to the First Edition

The supreme importance of respiration, being as it is one of the most universal and fundamental processes of living protoplasm, is recognized by all physiologists. In spite of this, students of botany frequently give respiration little more than a passing consideration.

This curious state of affairs is largely due to the fact that most of the existing accounts of respiration in plants are unsatisfactory because they are either insufficiently comprehensive or insufficiently lucid. In the present book we have aimed at giving an account of the nature of plant respiration which is readable and understandable by the elementary student of botany and which at the same time contains sufficient information to render it of value to the advanced student. We have throughout endeavoured to indicate the principles of plant respiration rather than to catalogue a mass of detailed observations from researches often of very dubious value. Nor have we thought it desirable to enter into a detailed discussion of the very considerable amount of recent work dealing with oxidizing systems in yeast and in animal cells, and the theories based on this work, for the bearing of these observations on the problems of plant respiration is at present not in the least clear.

Reference has, however, been made from time to time to actual researches where we have considered them to be useful as illustrations of various aspects of the subject. A list of these works is given at the end of the book. No

PREFACE

attempt has been made to compile a comprehensive bibliography of books and papers dealing with plant respiration.

W. S.

W. L.

Birmingham
1932

Preface to the Third Edition

During the fifteen years that have elapsed since the appearance of the second edition of this book very considerable advances have been made in our knowledge of the enzyme systems concerned in the breakdown of carbohydrate in plant tissues. Also, recent work has shown that a knowledge of the oxidizing systems in some animal tissues may be of assistance in elucidating problems of plant respiration. In view of the changed outlook that these developments have produced, the last chapter has been largely rewritten. Advances in knowledge of other aspects of respiration in plants have also necessitated a number of important alterations and additions throughout the book.

W. S.

W. L.

Birmingham, England
Winnipeg, Canada
February 1951

Preface to the Fourth Edition

Since this book was last revised some eight years ago two outstanding contributions have been made to our knowledge of respiration in plants. The first is the discovery that the enzymes responsible for oxidations in plant cells are located in the small particles generally regarded as mitochondria. The development of the technique of differential centrifugation for effecting the isolation of the mitochondria from other cell constituents has not only facilitated the study of oxidizing processes already recognized but has greatly helped towards the second major contribution to our knowledge of the respiratory mechanism, the recognition that in plants there may be more than one series of reactions by which respiration is brought about. Some account of these recent developments has therefore been added to the review of the respiratory mechanism described in the last chapter. The opportunity has also been taken of making a number of additions and amendments to the rest of the text, the chief of which concerns the influence on respiratory activity of oxygen concentration, a factor the effect of which is much more clearly recognized now than it was ten years ago.

W. S.

W. L.

Reading, England

Saanichton, B.C., Canada

30 September 1959

CHAPTER I

Introductory

In the maintenance of its life, every living thing exhibits a phenomenon which consists essentially in the breaking down of complex substances into simpler ones, with consequent release of energy. This phenomenon has been called 'dissimilation' in contrast to 'assimilation' in which simple substances are absorbed and built up into the organism in the form of substances of greater complexity and higher energy content. Although this dissimilation affects different materials in different species, it very commonly involves the breaking down, by oxidation, of carbohydrates and fats, the end-products being carbon dioxide and water. The dissimilation process thus involves an exchange of gases between the organism and its environment, oxygen being absorbed and carbon dioxide evolved. This exchange of gases, so characteristic in animals, is equally characteristic of the vast majority of plants. Hence the term 'respiration', used to denote this gaseous exchange and the processes of which it forms a part, is equally applicable to animals and plants.

Although the term respiration at first referred to the exchange of gases between the organism and its environment, so that, in the case of animals, it was synonymous with the term breathing, it has for many years now been more usual to regard respiration as involving the whole of the dissimilation process. The leading workers of fifty to

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

a hundred years ago, such as Sachs, Pfeffer, and Palladin, who were responsible for the modern conception of respiration, all gave the word respiration this wider meaning, and in this book respiration in plants is taken to include all the phenomena of dissimilation, the characteristics of which are the breaking down of complex substances into simpler ones with a consequent release of energy.

Respiration, so defined, is a much more fundamental property of living substance than the exchange of gases between organism and environment, for gaseous exchange is merely an aspect of the most usual form of respiration, and may not always be present, whereas respiration is a property, not merely of every living organism, but of every actively living cell. At the same time the cases in which respiration does not involve an exchange of gases are relatively few, and it is no wonder that Sachs, in reviewing the characteristics of plant respiration, laid particular stress on the importance of a supply of oxygen.

Indeed, latterly some writers would limit the term respiration to processes in which substances are broken down through oxidation by molecular oxygen. There are other dissimilation processes included in the conception of respiration indicated above which do not involve such an oxidation. These processes, which have for many years been regarded as coming within the category of respiration processes, would be excluded from this modern view of respiration. There are arguments for and against such an exclusion, but whether or not such processes are so excluded no account of respiration in plants would be adequate without a consideration of them. Without any intention of dogmatizing on a matter which is largely, though not entirely, a matter of definition, we shall in this book use the word respiration in its wider sense.

We may regard the history of our knowledge of respira-

INTRODUCTORY

tion in plants as beginning in the seventeenth century with such observations as that of Malpighi, published in the year 1679, that seeds require a supply of air in order to germinate. It was, however, naturally not until the development of pneumatic chemistry by Priestley, Lavoisier, and others, that the nature of gaseous exchange between organisms and environment could be appreciated. By 1777 Scheele had shown that germinating seeds absorbed and utilized oxygen and produced carbon dioxide, while about the same time Lavoisier began his work on animal respiration which was to put knowledge of that subject on a sound basis. In 1779 Ingen-Housz, in his *Experiments upon Vegetables*, showed that all living plants give out carbon dioxide in the dark, and that non-green plants do so in the light as well.

The serious study of plant physiology began with the introduction of quantitative investigation by de Saussure. In a paper published in 1797 with the title 'La formation de l'acide carbonique est-elle essentielle à la végétation?', he laid emphasis on the similarity between plants and animals in their production of carbon dioxide, and in their absorption of oxygen from the atmosphere for the formation of carbon dioxide. By actual measurement he was able to show that the volume of oxygen absorbed by germinating seeds was equal to that of the carbon dioxide produced. He dealt at greater length with the subject in his *Recherches chimiques sur la végétation*, published in 1804. In this work he recorded that with leaves in the dark he found that less carbon dioxide was evolved than oxygen absorbed. He further showed that different leaves respired at very different rates, while he observed the gaseous exchange exhibited by respiring roots, flowers, and fruits.

De Saussure clearly distinguished between the assimilatory gaseous exchange which proceeds in the green parts of

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

plants in the light and the reverse gaseous exchange which proceeds in non-green plants in both light and darkness and in green plants also in the dark. He further showed that germination and growth are dependent on a supply of oxygen.

In a later work, published in 1822, de Saussure showed that the evolution of heat by flowers, which had been recorded by Lamarck in *Arum italicum* in 1778, was accompanied by absorption of oxygen, two phenomena which are both features of respiration.

During the next forty years little progress in knowledge of respiration was made. Throughout this period much confusion of thought appears to have resulted through both gaseous exchanges being called 'respiration'. A plant was said to exhibit a diurnal respiration during the day and a nocturnal respiration at night. Nor is it likely that progress in knowledge of these matters was much helped when such an authority as Liebig denied the existence of a respiration in plants comparable with that of animals. According to him, plants simply absorbed carbon dioxide from the air or soil and later gave it off unchanged when assimilation stopped, much in the same way as water vapour is given off in transpiration.

However, von Mohl, in his *Grundzüge der Anatomie und Physiologie der vegetabilischen Zelle* published in 1851, and also Garreau in the same year, made perfectly clear the difference between these two kinds of gaseous exchange, and definitely indicated the significance of both in the life of the plant. It was not, however, until 1865 that Sachs pointed out what he later called 'the scarcely conceivable thoughtlessness and obtuseness' in 'speaking of a double respiration of plants—of a so-called diurnal respiration, meaning assimilation, and a so-called nocturnal respiration, by which was understood the evolution of carbon dioxide

INTRODUCTORY

which occurs in true respiration'. From this time onwards the term respiration ceased to be used in connexion with the assimilatory process.

The work and writings of Sachs gave a great impetus to plant physiology, and, from his time, work on respiration has proceeded practically without interruption. Among the numerous contributors to our knowledge of the subject during the half-century following Sachs's work, perhaps special mention should be made of Pfeffer and Palladin as original workers themselves and as inspirers of many others. During this period research on respiration chiefly aimed at acquiring information regarding the magnitude of the process and the manner in which it is affected by external and internal conditions. This was largely with a view to discovering what is generally called the mechanism of the process, such questions being involved as the nature of the materials utilized, the stages in the process, its relation to cell enzymes, the way in which it is linked with other plant processes and growth, and the part it plays in the life of the plant generally.

At the beginning of this chapter it was pointed out that the essential characteristic of what is now called respiration is not a particular exchange of gases between organism and environment, although this is generally present, but a catabolism or breaking down of more complex substances into simpler ones with a release of energy. In the commonest form of respiration this release of energy is brought about by the oxidation of organic material such as carbohydrates, fats, and proteins, for which a supply of atmospheric oxygen is necessary. This process is known as aerobic or oxygen respiration, and is universal enough to be regarded as the normal mode of respiration in plants. Indeed, as already indicated, some recent writers would limit the term respiration, in higher plants at any rate, to

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

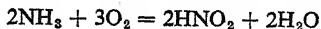
an oxidative breakdown of this kind. There will obviously be differences in detail according as the material utilized, or *substrate*, is carbohydrate, fat, or some other substance.

There are, however, other processes met with in plants which bring about a release of energy. The most important of these is that which has for many years been known as anaerobic respiration in which carbohydrate is broken down to alcohol and carbon dioxide without the participation of atmospheric oxygen, and which is thus similar to, and possibly identical with, the process known as alcoholic fermentation brought about by yeast. This process, as we have seen, would not be included as a respiratory process by some recent writers, who speak of the process as fermentation. This assumes that the process is indeed identical with alcoholic fermentation, but as the amount of alcohol produced in the anaerobic breakdown of the substrate in higher plants appears frequently to be less, and in some instances very much less, than the amount produced in alcoholic fermentation, the substitution of fermentation for anaerobic respiration is not free from objection unless the word fermentation is itself used in a wider sense. Meirion Thomas has used the term *zymasis* to describe the processes in which carbohydrate is broken down in the plant to yield carbon dioxide and alcohol. Probably all plants which normally respire aerobically continue to respire anaerobically, for a time at any rate, when deprived of oxygen. Much work has been done with the object of determining the relationship between these two processes.

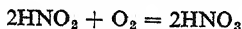
Anaerobic respiration is normally met with in certain bacteria. Some of these live only in absence of oxygen or in presence of a negligible concentration of this gas. Such organisms are termed *obligate* anaerobes, and include among others such forms as *Bacillus denitrificans* and cer-

INTRODUCTORY

tain butyric and lactic bacteria. *Facultative* anaerobes, on the other hand, are organisms which normally require oxygen but which can live anaerobically when grown on suitable media. Certain butyric and lactic bacteria also fall into this class as well as *Bacillus phosphorescens* and various thermophile bacteria. Among bacteria there also occur oxidations which appear to serve a respiratory function, and in which not an organic substrate, but an inorganic one, is oxidized. The best known of these are the nitrifying bacteria, *Nitrosomonas* and *Nitrococcus*, which obtain energy by oxidizing the ammonia of ammonium salts to nitrites. The oxidation is usually represented by the equation:

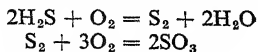


A second type of oxidation is present in the nitrating bacteria *Nitrobacter* which oxidize nitrites to nitrates:

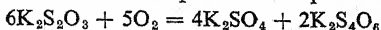


Apparently the energy obtained by these respiratory processes is sufficient for the life of these organisms, for there appears to be no respiration of organic material in them. Further, with the energy so obtained they are able to assimilate carbon dioxide without the necessity of absorbing light energy as in green plants.

Similar to the nitrifying and nitrating bacteria are the sulphur bacteria, including *Beggiatoa*, *Thiothrix*, and *Hillhousia*, which utilize hydrogen sulphide for respiratory purposes. The hydrogen sulphide is oxidized to sulphuric acid, free sulphur being formed in an intermediate stage and appearing in the cell in the form of relatively large particles:

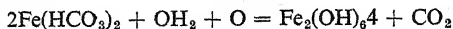


A further group of bacteria, the thiosulphate bacteria, *Thiobacillus*, oxidize thiosulphates to sulphates:



RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

The iron bacteria, *Spirophyllum ferrugineum*, *Crenothrix polyspora*, and others, are said to utilize ferrous iron for respiration, oxidizing it to the ferric condition. It has been suggested that the action is as represented in the following equation:



Some doubt has, however, been cast on the view that these bacteria utilize ferrous salts in this way.

The hydrogen bacteria, *Hydrogenomonas* spp., *Bacillus hydrogenes*, and *B. pantotrophus*, oxidize hydrogen to water, and, like the other forms mentioned above, obtain enough energy from this reaction to enable them to assimilate carbon dioxide without a supply of radiant energy.

These various kinds of respiration met with in bacteria are interesting and important in that they help to indicate the meaning of the respiratory process. They are, all the same, limited to a very few organisms, which, although plants, belong to a very highly specialized group. They will not be dealt with further in this book.

It has been noted that the essential property of respiration, whatever form it may take, is the release of energy. Every actively living cell respire and therefore presumably requires a supply of energy. This is generally accepted as a fact, but the reasons for it are often stated in the vaguest terms. One considerable worker in this field states that 'vital combustion . . . causes the mysterious apparatus of the living protoplasm to function', another that the 'energy is used in other processes that go on within the plant'. There are indications that part, perhaps much, of the energy released in respiration is dissipated in the form of heat, and can be measured as such, and that only a small proportion is transformed into mechanical or chemical energy. Some is presumably used in the building up of

INTRODUCTORY

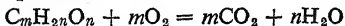
more complex compounds from inorganic materials and the sugars formed in photosynthesis, and in the building up of protoplasm itself, but it is not known, as Pfeffer pointed out sixty-three years ago, whether or not the respiratory processes involve a continual destruction and re-formation of the protoplasm. Some energy is no doubt utilized in streaming movements of protoplasm and other movements of material in the plant. The passage of salts into and through the plant would also appear to require energy provided by respiration. But, apart from the few plant bodies that have the power of active locomotion, there does not appear anywhere in the vegetable kingdom a necessity for a large supply of energy for the mere maintenance of life comparable with that obviously required by a free-moving animal. Nevertheless, we must suppose that a certain and continuous supply of energy is as necessary for the plant as for the animal, for of all the characteristics of living matter, none is more constant than the presence of respiration, and nothing is more characteristic of the actively living plant cell than the continuous incidence of this process.

It has been stated above that de Saussure initiated a new era in plant physiology in that he introduced quantitative measurement into his researches. The advance of knowledge of respiration, as of every plant process, has depended largely on its measurement. We have noted that the respiratory process is not constant throughout the plant kingdom and that its essential characteristic, a release of energy, may be effected in different ways. However, in the vast majority of cases respiration consists of a slow oxidation of material, of which the outward signs are a consumption of oxygen and elimination of carbon dioxide. This is the process which, as we have already indicated, is known as aerobic, or oxygen respiration, or sometimes as

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

normal respiration. Here, theoretically, respiration could be studied quantitatively by determining either the oxygen consumption or the carbon dioxide evolution exhibited by the respiring tissue, and in practice the determination of one or other of these quantities usually forms the basis of respiration measurement. The loss of material in respiration would also give a measure of the process, but such determinations are not always practicable. The measurement of respiratory activity, therefore, generally resolves itself into either a determination of oxygen absorption or carbon dioxide evolution.

Where the substrate of respiration is a carbohydrate the complete oxidation of the carbohydrate to carbon dioxide and water involves the consumption of a volume of oxygen equal to that of the carbon dioxide evolved according to the general equation:



When this relation is actually maintained it does not matter whether the respiration is measured by determining oxygen absorption or carbon dioxide evolution. Not infrequently, however, as will be seen in the next chapter, the volumes of oxygen absorbed and carbon dioxide evolved, owing to a number of reasons, are not the same. For example, a plant which normally respire aerobically will still give out carbon dioxide in absence of oxygen, and in low concentrations of oxygen the volume of carbon dioxide evolved may exceed that of oxygen absorbed, as if respiration were partly aerobic and partly anaerobic. In such cases, and wherever there is evidence of a change in the ratio of carbon dioxide evolved to oxygen absorbed, as well as in many other instances, a knowledge of both the rate of oxygen absorption and carbon dioxide evolution is desirable.

Various forms of apparatus have been devised for

INTRODUCTORY

measuring the oxygen absorbed and the carbon dioxide evolved by respiring plants. In the simplest types of apparatus the respiring material is enclosed in a vessel containing a gas mixture of known composition. After a lapse of a suitable time the carbon dioxide is determined by observing the reduction in volume at constant pressure after this gas is absorbed by potassium hydroxide, while the oxygen can be similarly determined by the use of pyrogallol. Where the volume of gas available is sufficient for exact determination, the changes in composition of the gas mixture can be measured by direct analysis. Frequently, however, the quantity of gas available is insufficient for this, and in consequence of the need for determining the carbon dioxide and oxygen changes in relatively small quantities of gas, various so-called micro-eudiometers have been devised, one of the earliest of which was that of Bonnier and Mangin. The principle involved in the use of this apparatus was, however, the same as that of an ordinary gas-analysis method. It was claimed that oxygen could be determined to 0.5 per cent. and carbon dioxide to 0.3 per cent. of the total volume.

A further variant of this method consists in absorbing the carbon dioxide evolved in a solution of an indicator. The colour change produced depends upon the amount of carbon dioxide absorbed and can be estimated by matching the indicator with standard tints.

Of late years manometric methods for measuring respiration have become popular. The respiring material is held in a vessel containing an absorbent of carbon dioxide, usually potassium hydroxide or sodium hydroxide, and to which a manometer is attached. As respiration proceeds oxygen is absorbed by the tissue and the carbon dioxide evolved is removed by the absorbent, so that there is a loss of gas in the vessel to the extent of the oxygen absorbed

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

and a consequent movement of the liquid in the manometer which thus provides a measure of the respiration in terms of oxygen consumed. A number of convenient forms of manometer have been devised, with which the names of Barcroft, Warburg, Thunberg, and Fenn are associated. With the use of small respiration vessels the method can be made quite sensitive. Also, by the carrying out of parallel experiments with exactly similar samples of material, if such are possible, in one of which the carbon dioxide absorbent is present in the respiration vessel and in the other of which it is absent, values for the evolution of carbon dioxide as well as of the absorption of oxygen can be calculated. A single value for the evolution of carbon dioxide can also be obtained if, in the vessel containing the respiring tissue and the carbon dioxide absorbent, acid is added to the absorbent at the end of the experiment so that the absorbed carbon dioxide is released.

The authors developed the instrument known as the katharometer for the measurement of carbon dioxide evolution. Here the change in resistance of a spiral of platinum wire consequent on changes in the concentration of carbon dioxide in the gas surrounding the wire forms the basis of the measurement. By taking necessary precautions, carbon dioxide can be determined to 0.001 per cent. of the total volume. This instrument is thus 300 times as sensitive as the apparatus of Bonnier and Mangin and can be used for very small quantities of gas. It has also an advantage over most other methods of measuring respiration in that a continuous record of carbon dioxide evolution can be obtained with it.

It is frequently an advantage in measuring respiration not to keep the respiring tissue in a closed chamber but to pass a continuous current of gas of known composition over the material. The carbon dioxide is then absorbed

INTRODUCTORY

from the gas after it leaves the respiration vessel. In the most usual form of apparatus the gas bubbles through a tube, the well-known Pettenkofer tube, containing a standard solution of barium hydroxide, for a definite time, the carbon dioxide absorbed being then determined by titration. Instead of determining the carbon dioxide by titration, Spoehr measured the electrical conductivity of the solution, the fall in electrical conductivity being a measure of the carbon dioxide absorbed. Other workers have absorbed the carbon dioxide in potassium hydroxide solution and determined the quantity of gas absorbed either from the gain in weight or by titration.

The chief disadvantage of using a continuous stream of gas is that the method is not very sensitive, so that it frequently requires a considerable amount of material and a long period of respiration in order to obtain a single measurement. The chief advantages of the method are that the carbon dioxide does not accumulate in the neighbourhood of the respiring tissue and that a series of measurements can be made over a period of time.

However, both these advantages can be introduced into methods involving the use of a closed system if the respiration chamber forms part of a circulatory system involving also a vessel containing the absorber of carbon dioxide and a pump to effect circulation.

The rate of carbon dioxide evolution or of oxygen absorption having been measured, there still remains the question of how these values can be used to express respiratory activity. Usually the carbon dioxide evolved in unit time per unit of dry matter is taken as a measure of respiratory activity. Less frequently results have been calculated on a fresh weight basis. Palladin attempted to calculate respiratory activity in terms of evolution of carbon dioxide per unit of protoplasm, but it is doubtful if he

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

was really able to obtain a value for the amount of protoplasm in different tissues. Latterly the same object has been attempted by expressing results in terms of unit of nitrogen or unit of protein.

We shall have occasion to refer to this question of measurement of respiratory activity in the next chapter.

CHAPTER II

Respiration of Normal Plants under Aerobic Conditions

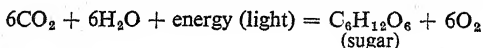
Most of the common plants with which we are familiar live with the greater part of their external surfaces in contact with the atmosphere. There is therefore available for their use an abundant supply of oxygen. It has already been stated that plants in their normal respiration absorb quantities of oxygen and at the same time give out carbon dioxide. This exchange of gases, which is the outward manifestation of respiration, although continually taking place, may be masked or even reversed in the green parts of the plants when they are exposed to light, as a result of photosynthetic activity. During night time, or when a plant is placed in the dark, the absorption of oxygen and evolution of carbon dioxide can always be demonstrated. The exchange of gases takes place over all parts of the plant which are in contact with the atmosphere except where the external walls of the superficial cells are rendered impermeable by impregnation with such substances as cutin and suberin. Within the plant the process is maintained by diffusion between one living cell and another and between the cells and intercellular spaces, the latter usually being in direct communication with the outside air through such channels as stomata and lenticels.

It cannot as yet be said that the full significance for the life of the plant of the process which we call respiration is

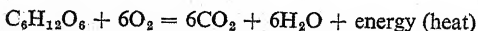
RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

realized. Its existence and intensity can easily be demonstrated and studied through the medium of the resulting gaseous exchange which is nearly always taking place. We know that it resembles a slow combustion whereby certain complex organic substances are oxidized and broken down into simple substances with an accompanying release of energy. The greater part of this released energy is frequently dissipated in the form of heat, and as such can be detected and measured.

The amount of energy that is released when a complex substance is broken down into simple substances is equal to the amount of energy that has to be supplied to the simple substances in order to make them combine and form the complex substance. In the green parts of plants we know that energy from the sun in the form of light is absorbed and used in photosynthesis to bring about the formation of sugar from carbon dioxide and water. This reaction is indicated in a general way by the equation:



In the presence of atmospheric oxygen, sugar can readily be made to burn and give out heat, and in the process of burning it is broken down into carbon dioxide and water, as shown in the equation:



The above equation represents the process in its simplest form in which direct combination occurs between gaseous oxygen and sugar. The combination is rapid so that the whole of the energy involved is released as heat in a very short time, which consequently causes a marked rise in temperature in the neighbourhood of the seat of the reaction. In plant respiration we frequently find sugar being broken down to carbon dioxide and water, but the process

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

is more complicated. It involves a chain of reactions in which a series of intermediate products is formed. Also the quantity of sugar oxidized is relatively small and is distributed through a relatively large mass of tissue. As a consequence, even where practically all the energy is known to be released in the form of heat, the resulting rise in the temperature of the tissue is so small as to be often difficult to measure. This chain of reactions, which is discussed at length in Chapter IV and which results in the breaking down of sugar, is due to the activities of enzymes that are produced within the protoplasm of the living cells where respiration is taking place. It is thus misleading to speak of respiration as combustion. There are, however, two points of resemblance between respiration and combustion; firstly, the substrate and final products may be the same in the two processes, and secondly, the total amount of energy set free will be the same in the two processes provided the end products are the same.

RESPIRATORY QUOTIENT

It will be readily gathered from an examination of the equation on page 16 that where, in the plant organ, sugar is the substance broken down during respiration under conditions of a plentiful supply of oxygen, with the production of carbon dioxide and water, six molecules of oxygen will be used up for every molecule of hexose sugar respired. As a result of this, six molecules of carbon dioxide are set free. In other words, the ratio of the volume of carbon dioxide evolved to the volume of oxygen absorbed is equal to unity. This ratio is known as the *respiratory quotient*. There is thus an intimate relationship between the value of the respiratory quotient and the composition of the respiratory substrate on the one hand, and

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

the nature of the respiratory process on the other. Where this substrate is carbohydrate the respiratory quotient is always in the neighbourhood of unity if the respiratory process results in complete breakdown to water and carbon dioxide. This has been demonstrated by a number of investigators, by measuring the oxygen intake and carbon dioxide output of respiring fungus mycelia growing on culture solutions containing various known substances.

For example, Puriewitsch obtained the values given below for the respiratory quotient in the case of *Aspergillus niger*.

TABLE I
Respiratory Quotients of Aspergillus on Various Media
(From Puriewitsch)

10 per cent. Sucrose	10 per cent. Glucose	10 per cent. Raffinose
1.05	1.17	0.90
1.09	1.19	0.93

Similarly, De Boer obtained values for the respiratory quotient of between 0.99 and 1.21 for *Phycomyces* grown on bread.

With higher plants it is not always easy to correlate respiratory quotient values with the composition of the substrate, as the latter may often be difficult to ascertain. With leaves, however, the problem is fairly simple, as these organs, if removed from the plant during active assimilation, contain abundance of carbohydrates. These carbohydrates, if the leaves are placed in the dark, form the substrate for respiration, and, just as with the fungi mentioned above, the respiratory quotient approaches unity. The table on page 19 gives values of the respiratory quotients in a number of leaves investigated by Maquenne and Demoussy.

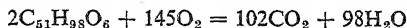
It frequently happens in plants that fats and not carbo-

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

hydrates form the substrate for respiration. Fats require a larger amount of oxygen for their complete oxidation to water and carbon dioxide than do carbohydrates. Thus the complete oxidation of the fat tripalmitin,



involves the utilization of 145 molecules of oxygen for every 102 molecules of carbon dioxide produced:



As a consequence, we find that respiration involving the breaking down of fats into carbon dioxide and water results in a respiratory quotient of less than unity. This fact also has been clearly demonstrated by means of the fungus *Phycomyces*. By growing *Phycomyces* on a ground linseed medium, De Boer obtained values for the respiratory quotient varying between 0.66 and 0.75.

TABLE II
Respiratory Quotients of Leaves
(From Maquenne and Demoussy)

Ailanthus	1.08	Pea	1.07
Aspidistra	0.97	Pear	1.10
Aucuba	1.11	Poppy	1.09
Begonia	1.11	Privet	1.03
Cherry Laurel	1.03	Rhubarb	1.02
Chrysanthemum	1.02	Ricinus	1.03
Haricot	1.11	Rose	1.02
"	1.07	Sorrel	1.04
Ivy	1.08	Spindle Tree	1.08
Lilac	1.07	Tobacco	1.03
Lily	1.07	Turnip	1.11
Mahonia (autumn)	0.95	Vine	1.01
Maize	1.07	Wheat	1.03
Oleander	1.05	Wild Grape	1.00

The respiratory quotient has formed a centre of interest in a considerable number of researches on the course of respiration of seeds during germination. As is well known,

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

seeds contain reserve stores of food materials which provide for the needs of the growing plant in its early stages of development. In the majority of seeds this food reserve consists mostly of oil (liquid fat); in some, for example, those of Leguminosae and Gramineae, it may be mainly carbohydrate in the form of starch, or less frequently, hemicellulose or sugar, while in others it appears to be largely protein.

From what has already been said it is clear that the nature of the food reserve in any given seed should affect the value of the respiratory quotient during germination. There is ample experimental evidence to show that this is so, and in general it may be stated that in seeds with carbohydrate reserve materials the respiratory quotient during the greater part of the germination period approaches unity. On the other hand, with fat-containing seeds, the respiratory quotient falls considerably below unity. The matter, however, is far from being simple, and many researches have shown that the respiratory quotient is not constant but is continually changing during the germination period. This is no doubt partly due to the fact that although one particular reserve substance may predominate in the seeds of a species or variety, smaller quantities of other reserves are present. Thus wheat grains and buckwheat seeds, in which about 70 per cent. of the dry matter consists of carbohydrate, contain about 2 per cent. of fat and 10 or 12 per cent. of protein, while in castor-oil seeds where fat, the chief reserve, accounts for about 55 per cent. of the dry weight, there is present about 2 per cent. of carbohydrate and as much as 20 per cent. of protein.

Researches with seeds of a number of species have shown that the respiratory quotient of seeds in the dormant or almost dormant condition when the amount of respiration is measurable, is less than unity. Thus Harrington found

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

the respiratory quotient of apple seeds kept on moist blotting-paper at 19° C. to be about 0.7, while James and James obtained a mean value of 0.64 for the respiratory quotient of barley grains. However, with the onset of germination the quotient quickly rises during the first few hours of germination of nearly all seeds that have been examined, so that the respiratory quotient is in the neighbourhood of unity or is greater than unity. As germination proceeds the value of the quotient falls. In seeds with

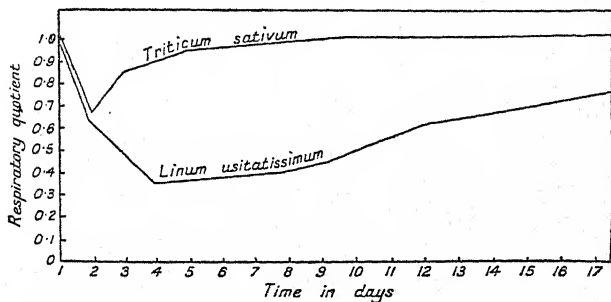


Fig. 1. Curves showing the changes occurring in the value of the respiratory quotient during the first 17 days of germination and development of seeds of *Triticum sativum* and *Linum usitatissimum*
(After Bonnier and Mangin)

carbohydrate food reserve the fall in the value of the quotient may be slight, and in any case continues only for a short time, after which it rises again and approaches unity. With fat-containing seeds the fall in the value of the quotient is very marked and continues usually for a considerable time. Eventually, however, it also rises and approaches unity. This difference in the behaviour of the respiratory quotient for carbohydrate and fat-containing seeds is illustrated by the curves shown in Fig. 1.

It thus appears that the germination of fat-containing

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

seeds can be, broadly speaking, divided into three phases. *Phase 1*: an initial period during which the value of the respiratory quotient is high, or in other words, the output of carbon dioxide is approximately equal to or greater than the intake of oxygen. *Phase 2*: a middle period during which the respiratory quotient decreases to a minimum value owing to a considerable increase in the volume of oxygen absorbed compared with the volume of carbon dioxide given out. *Phase 3*: a final period in which the respiratory quotient rises and may approach unity. Theoretical explanations which would appear to account for the differences that exist between these three phases will now be briefly discussed. In the initial phase the respiratory quotient is in the neighbourhood of unity. This is probably due to the fact that when germination is beginning, the respiratory substrate is provided by a small quantity of hexose sugar which is always present in dormant seeds. As water continues to be absorbed by the seed the enzymes which bring about the conversion of fats into carbohydrates are activated with the result that the respiratory quotient falls. This fall in the quotient which is shown by both typically carbohydrate-storing seeds as well as fat-storing seeds is due to the fact that even in carbohydrate seeds there is present a small amount of fat.

We thus note that phase 2 with its falling quotient is the result of the utilization of fat for the production of respiratory substrate. In carbohydrate seeds the amount of fat present is usually small and is soon exhausted. The fall in the quotient in their case therefore only continues for a short period, at the end of which the respiratory breakdown of carbohydrate again becomes the predominant process and consequently the quotient again rises towards unity. With fat-storing seeds a much longer and greater fall in the

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

quotient occurs as fat continues to be converted into carbohydrate.

It will be observed from inspection of Fig. 1 that the respiratory quotient of germinating flax seeds falls far below the theoretical value of about 0.7 for the oxidation of fat. This is due to the fact that as well as a complete oxidation of fat to carbon dioxide and water there is at the same time an accumulation of sugar in the germinating seeds. The source of this sugar must be fat, and oxygen is used in this transformation without any evolution of carbon dioxide taking place. Consequently the greater the ratio of sugar formation to complete oxidation the lower will be the ratio of carbon dioxide evolved to oxygen absorbed. It is very likely that in the oxidation of fat to carbon dioxide and water sugar is first formed, so that the respiratory quotients lower than 0.7 result from the breaking down of the sugar proceeding more slowly than its formation from fat.

In phase 3 an oxidation of carbohydrate substrate, produced as described under phase 2, takes place. This process goes on at the same time as the oxidation of the reserve fats, and its intensity is such that successively determined values of the respiratory quotient follow a rising course.

These theoretical views are further supported by the chemical analyses of germinating hemp seeds published by Detmer and given on page 24.

It will be seen that these three sets of figures roughly correspond with the three germination phases outlined above.

After seven days 15.56 gm. of fat have disappeared, and 8.64 gm. of starch have been formed, which corresponds closely with the respiratory behaviour during the second phase.

After ten days, it will be seen that the amount of fat has

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

been still further reduced and at the same time some of the starch formed in the second phase has disappeared. Some of this starch has presumably been oxidized to water and carbon dioxide while some has probably been used in the formation of cellulose and protein, both of which substances have increased in quantity.

TABLE III
Chemical Changes in Hemp Seeds during Germination
(From Detmer)

	Fat	Starch	Protein	Undetermined compounds	Cellulose	Ash
100 gm.	gm.	gm.	gm.	gm.	gm.	gm.
Ungerminated seeds	32.65	—	25.06	21.28	16.51	4.5
After germinating 7 days	17.09	8.64	23.99	26.13	16.54	4.5
After germinating 10 days	15.20	4.59	24.50	26.95	18.29	4.5

When we come to consider the utilization of proteins by plants as respiratory substrates, we are faced with a serious lack of knowledge. Although the seeds of many species, particularly those of the Leguminosae, contain relatively large quantities of protein, there is no definite evidence that this protein is utilized in respiration. Analyses of some seeds of this type at progressive stages in germination have shown that the total amount of protein remains approximately constant, but in others, as for example those of the yellow lupin, *Lupinus luteus*, there is a very considerable loss of protein on germination, with a corresponding increase in simpler nitrogenous compounds such as amino-acids and asparagine, the amide of the amino-acid aspartic acid. Prianischnikov considered that this production of

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

asparagine was connected with respiration. Asparagine has the formula $\text{COOH} \cdot \text{CH}(\text{NH}_2) \cdot \text{CH}_2 \cdot \text{CONH}_2$ and it is calculated that the oxidation of protein to the final products asparagine, carbon dioxide, and water would give a respiratory quotient of about 0.7. Bonnier and Mangin actually obtained a respiratory quotient of 0.58 for yellow lupin seedlings with radicles 4 to 5 cm. long and the cotyledons still closed, and a value of 0.42 with somewhat older seedlings with the cotyledons still closed but with radicles 8 to 9 cm. long. In still older seedlings with cotyledons half open and first foliage leaves visible, the quotient was recorded as 0.72. The low values of 0.58 and 0.42 strongly suggest the utilization of fat, part of which is converted to sugar and part ultimately to carbon dioxide and water, but there is nothing in these values of the respiratory quotient inconsistent with the utilization of a mixture of fat and protein or of a mixture of carbohydrate, fat, and protein. The value of 0.72 found with older seedlings is near to that to be expected for the oxidation of protein to asparagine, carbon dioxide, and water, but it could equally well be attributed to a utilization of fat. These values of Bonnier and Mangin referred to the late stages in germination. The authors determined the respiratory quotient of seeds of *Lupinus luteus* during early stages of germination and found values of the respiratory quotient for the first 24 hours of the germinating period between 1.0 and 0.9; only after 2 or 3 days did the quotient fall to about 0.76. Indeed, the changes in the respiratory quotient during germination of seeds of *Lupinus luteus* are very similar to those of a typical fat seed such as that of *Linum usitatissimum* (Fig. 1), and clearly the explanation of these changes in terms of material utilized can be the same for the two species. It will, however, be seen that no decisive conclusion can be drawn regarding the utilization of protein in the respiration

of these seeds from values of the respiratory quotient alone.

It would appear that in some animal tissues the final oxidation products of protein are ammonia, carbon dioxide and water, and in plants, too, ammonia is to be regarded as the final nitrogenous end-product of protein decomposition. While the production of small amounts of ammonia during germination has been reported, there is no suggestion that this is at all common. If, however, protein were oxidized to carbon dioxide, water, and ammonia the calculated respiratory quotient would be about 0.95. This is so near to that for carbohydrate that obviously respiratory quotients could provide no evidence of the utilization of protein in this way if carbohydrate were also present.

Evidence that protein may be used in the respiration of leaves starved by maintenance in the dark is more definite. Under such conditions the respiration rate gradually falls until it reaches a minimum constant level which is maintained for a considerable time if the leaves remain alive. This minimum constant respiration rate of starved leaves was termed by Blackman 'protoplasmic respiration' in contradistinction to 'floating respiration', in which carbohydrates or other reserve materials are utilized. Determinations of the respiratory quotient of starved barley leaves made by Yemm strongly suggest that the so-called protoplasmic respiration involves a utilization of protein. When the leaves are first placed in the dark the respiratory quotient is about unity, attributable presumably to the oxidation of carbohydrate. During the second day the quotient progressively falls to about 0.8; this could be due to the lessening utilization of carbohydrate and an increasing utilization of protein with the end-products asparagine, carbon dioxide and water. From the end of the second day up to the end of the fourth day the quotient remains in

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

the neighbourhood of 0.8; Yemm supposes this is due to the continued lessening of the proportion of carbohydrate oxidized and an increase in the utilization of protein, of which an increasing percentage is converted to ammonia, carbon dioxide, and water. In the final stage of starvation, after about 100 hours from the transference of the leaves to the dark, the quotient rises from about 0.8 to 0.9 as more and more of the protein is broken down to the end-products ammonia, carbon dioxide and water. Detailed chemical analyses of starved tobacco leaves made by Vickery, Pucher, Wakeman and Leavenworth also show that in the later stages of starvation amino-acids derived from the breaking down of proteins must be utilized in respiration, and in later work Yemm was able to isolate asparagine in crystalline form from starved barley leaves.

It has also been suggested that protein may be utilized as a respiratory substrate in *Asparagus* and spinach during storage. In *Asparagus* Platenius found the loss in sugar during three days in storage at 24° C. only accounted for about half the carbon dioxide given off. That the rest might have arisen from protein was suggested by the respiratory quotient which fell from 1.04 at the beginning of the storage period to 0.88 after two days in storage. This was followed by a rise to 0.95 after another day. From what has been written above it will be clear that these values are consistent with a utilization of a mixture of carbohydrate and protein. Values of the quotient down to 0.83 were found for spinach and Platenius suggested that here the leaf proteins might have been utilized in respiration. Similar values were obtained by Platenius for potatoes stored at 10° C. and 24° C. Bennett and Bartholomew, however, obtained the very low value of 0.49 for potato tubers stored at 7.5° C., while Platenius obtained values down to 0.45 at the beginning of storage of potato tubers at 0.5° C. Platenius regarded these

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

low values as most easily explained on the basis of an incomplete oxidation of carbohydrate to organic acids.

Another possible instance of utilization of protein in respiration has been recorded by Stiles and Dent. When thin slices of red beetroot tissue were kept in aerated running tap water the respiratory quotient remained about unity for many days but with continued consumption of the substrate the value fell to 0.9 or less. This behaviour appears to be very similar to that observed in the other instances cited above, and a similar explanation is possible.

With regard to the cases we have just been discussing, the value of the respiratory quotient is chiefly considered from a relatively simple standpoint, namely, where substrates of highly complex chemical composition are broken down to simple compounds such as water and carbon dioxide. It may be assumed with a reasonable degree of certainty that such catabolic processes are useful to the plant mainly in so far as they set free energy. As has already been shown, the value of the respiratory quotient here depends upon the composition of the original substrate. There is, however, another aspect of the question to be considered. In the vast majority of plants, sugar may be taken as the fundamental substance from which by additive or subtractive processes the whole physical and physiological fabric of the organism is constructed. So far as we know, respiration is the universal accompaniment of life, and consequently, in the living plant, sugar is continually being utilized for the formation of other less complex or more complex substances. In the formation of these substances the sugar may be able to supply the exact amount of oxygen required, or on the other hand, additional oxygen may be needed, or surplus oxygen may be set free. In other words, the value of the measured respiratory quotient will depend upon the substance or substances that are

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

being formed. A considerable amount of experimental evidence confirming this point is available, some of which will now be dealt with.

One of the first of such cases that suggests itself to us is that of the maturation of seeds which have fatty food reserves. We have seen that in the germination of such seeds, the breaking down of the fats first to sugars and later to carbon dioxide and water, results in a respiratory quotient of a value less than unity. As these fats, during maturation of the seed, are formed from sugars, one would expect, during maturation, the respiratory quotient to be greater than unity since the change from sugar to fat involves an elimination of oxygen. This has been experimentally demonstrated, as will be seen from the figures obtained by Gerber for linseed. During the maturation period immediately before ripening he found the average value of the respiratory quotient for six seeds to be 1.22, while during the germination of these same seeds the respiratory quotient fell to the average value of 0.64.

Then we have the often-cited case of succulent plants, in the cells of which accumulations of organic acids occur; malic acid in the Cactaceae and Crassulaceae, and oxalic acid in species of *Mesembryanthemum*. When these plants are placed in darkness, the amount of oxygen absorbed in the process of respiration is in excess of the amount of carbon dioxide evolved; in some extreme cases oxygen may be absorbed in marked quantities while no carbon dioxide is given off. Aubert, working with a species of *Opuntia* placed in darkness, obtained a mean value of 0.03 for the respiratory quotient. After the plants have been kept in darkness for a time, the accumulation of organic acids slows down and the rate of evolution of carbon dioxide gradually increases, with a corresponding increase in the value of the respiratory quotient, which, however, does not

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

reach unity. A similar rise in the value of the quotient is produced by an increase in temperature. When the plants are exposed to sunlight, the acids are decomposed and carbon dioxide is set free. Thus there occurs an accumulation at night of organic acids, which, in the morning, are broken down with liberation of carbon dioxide. This latter gas is available for use in the process of assimilation. It has been suggested that this peculiar metabolism is beneficial to plants like succulents, in which, owing to the massive construction of their assimilatory organs, interchange of gases with the atmosphere may be relatively slow.

A somewhat similar case to that of succulents is that of plants whose leaves are coloured red by the presence of anthocyanin in their cells. Nicolas compared the respiration of green leaves with that of red leaves either from the same plants or from varieties of the same species whose leaves are red. He found that in every case examined the respiratory quotient of red leaves was lower than that of green leaves. He also found that these differences in the quotients were always due to a more active absorption of oxygen by the red leaves than by the green leaves. These differences in the quotients can apparently be related to a greater accumulation of organic acids in the leaves containing anthocyanin than in those from which this pigment is absent. The figures in Table IV, taken from Nicolas, show the amount of acetic acid (milligrams per gramme fresh weight) in green and red leaves of four species examined, together with the respiratory quotients obtained.

Certain external physical conditions have been found to influence the value of the respiratory quotient. Temperature may markedly affect it in so far as it determines the velocity of the oxidation processes. In the already mentioned case of succulents, where increase in temperature results in the decomposition of organic acids, a marked increase in the

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

value of the respiratory quotient is brought about. An increase in the value of the respiratory quotient with increase in temperature is recorded by Harrington for apple seeds. Acorns provide an extreme instance of this effect of temperature. With one species (*Quercus alba*) J. W. Brown found the respiratory quotient increased from 0.164 at 2.5° C. to 0.713 at 30° C. and in another species (*Q. borealis* var. *maxima*) it increased from 0.087 at 2.5° C. to

TABLE IV
Respiratory Quotients and Acid Content of
Green and Red Leaves
(From Nicolas)

	Green leaves		Red leaves	
	Mg. Acetic acid	$\frac{\text{CO}_2}{\text{O}_2}$	Mg. Acetic acid	$\frac{\text{CO}_2}{\text{O}_2}$
<i>Raphiolepis ovata</i>	2.88	1.01	6.48	0.81
<i>Photinia glabra</i>	5.85	0.90	6.66	0.77
<i>Acokanthera spectabilis</i>	8.21	0.94	11.11	0.71
<i>Prunus cerasifera</i>	6.60	0.80	—	—
<i>Prunus cerasifera</i> var. <i>Pissardi</i>	—	—	10.80	0.70

0.460 at 30° C. An interesting fact which is probably connected with this, is that sugars and organic acids have been found by a number of workers to accumulate in dormant structures when they are stored at low temperatures.

If the concentration of oxygen in the atmosphere surrounding the respiring tissue is reduced below a given value, which varies with the plant material used, a marked rise in the value of the respiratory quotient results. This fact was clearly brought out by the researches of Stich in 1891. He found that the percentage of oxygen in the

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

experimental atmosphere could be reduced from that of normal air, namely 20.8 per cent., down to values in the neighbourhood of 5 per cent. without bringing about any significant alteration in the respiratory quotient. When this lower limit of oxygen concentration, the exact value of which depended upon the species of the respiring plant, was passed, a marked increase in the quotient occurred. This is shown by the figures given in Table V, which are taken from Stich's paper.

TABLE V
*Effect of Oxygen Concentration on
Respiratory Quotient*
(From Stich)

Experimental material	Percentage of oxygen in atmosphere	$\frac{\text{CO}_2}{\text{O}_2}$
<i>Triticum vulgare</i> , seedlings	20.8	0.98
	9.0	0.94
	5.0	0.93
	3.0	3.34
<i>Zea Mais</i> , seedlings	20.8	0.89
	9.0	0.96
	5.0	1.35
	3.6	1.37
<i>Pisum sativum</i> , seedlings	20.8	0.83
	9.3	0.86
	3.5	2.31
<i>Narcissus poeticus</i> , bulb	20.8	0.96
	10.2	1.04
	7.5	2.36

Some values obtained more recently by Marsh and Goddard with thin slices of carrot-root tissue show that in low oxygen concentrations the respiratory quotient pro-

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

gressively increases with reduction in the oxygen concentration (Table VI).

TABLE VI

Effect of Low Oxygen Concentrations on the Respiratory Quotient of Carrot-root Tissues

(From Marsh and Goddard)

Percentage of oxygen in atmosphere	Oxygen absorbed in $\mu\text{l. per gm. per hr.}$	Carbon dioxide evolved in $\mu\text{l. per gm. per hr.}$	$\frac{\text{CO}_2}{\text{O}_2}$
5	53.0	43.5	0.82
5	56.8	43.8	0.77
2.5	45.0	56.3	1.25
2	40.5	52.0	1.28
2	37.8	45.8	1.21
2	28.3	49.0	1.73
2	28.3	55.6	1.96
1	15.6	52.0	3.3
1	14.2	49.5	3.5
1	19.2	66.5	3.3

Increases in the concentration of carbon dioxide in the atmosphere surrounding the plant have a very marked depressing effect on the intensity of the respiratory processes, as will be seen later (p. 62). They also bring about a lowering of the respiratory quotient by causing a greater depression in carbon dioxide output than in oxygen intake. (See Table XI, p. 63.)

From the foregoing it thus appears that a study of the respiratory quotient may afford interesting clues as to the nature of the respiratory processes that are taking place within the plant. It has already been pointed out that, as many reactions may be safely assumed to be taking place in plant cells at one and the same time, it may be somewhat misleading to consider respiration as a simple physiological combustion involving the breaking down of a substrate to carbon dioxide and water with the absorption of oxygen. It is possible that more than one substrate may often, if not

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

invariably, be involved; also it is possible that a number of reaction chains may simultaneously exist, giving rise to a diversity of final products. Each of these reaction chains will have its own particular value for the carbon dioxide-oxygen ratio, so that the respiratory quotient for a particular experimental subject, as measured by the experimental means at our disposal, will be the mean of all these reaction chain ratios. It may, as with values obtained from germinating fatty seeds, strongly indicate the nature of the predominant reaction chain that is taking place within the cells of the experimental tissue at the time of the experiment. On the other hand, where no one reaction chain is of sufficient intensity, or has a sufficiently characteristic carbon dioxide-oxygen ratio, to impress itself in an unmistakable way upon the observed respiratory quotient, the value of that quotient will convey little useful information as to what is happening inside the cells of the experimental material. Indeed, it may lead to entirely wrong conclusions; for example, the mean observed quotient resulting from a variety of reaction chains may have a result approaching unity and may consequently convey the idea that a simple complete combustion of carbohydrate substrate to carbon dioxide and water is the predominant chain. The value that is to be placed on such conclusions is obvious, even though it be supported on the part of the experimenter by the usual chemical arguments. These points are mentioned, not with a view to depreciating the existing results of various investigators, but by way of emphasizing the difficulties that confront workers in this field of research.

INTENSITY OF RESPIRATION

An examination of the various published general accounts of plant respiration reveals the fact that a considerable

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

amount of vagueness exists where attempts are made to deal with the question of the intensity of respiration. In some instances modes of expression are used which are decidedly misleading; for example, one modern author of some repute refers to respiration intensity as respiratory energy, and states that the amount of carbon dioxide given off from a unit of living substance serves as a measure of this. Such a statement, besides being incorrect, involves a misuse of the term energy. Further, the complexity of the process of respiration and the intimacy of its relationship with all the vital processes of the living organism, do not always appear to be taken into account by writers when dealing with respiration intensity. This fact is evident when we consider the criteria most generally used for the purpose of expressing respiration intensity.

As pointed out in Chapter I, these criteria are naturally based on gaseous exchange. Usually either the amount of carbon dioxide evolved, or the amount of oxygen absorbed, by the respiring tissue is recorded. These quantities of gas are used as an indication of respiratory intensity by referring them to such quantities as the dry weight of the tissue used, the fresh weight of the tissue used, or the amount of nuclein nitrogen contained in the cells of the tissue.

When, however, we consider the already outlined variations that occur in the value of the respiratory quotient it is clear that estimation of respiration intensity based on the amount of oxygen absorbed, or on the amount of carbon dioxide evolved, may possess serious inaccuracies. It is true that such criteria, though far from being entirely satisfactory, are useful in an approximate and general way for comparative purposes. We are, however, faced with the fact that no really accurate method of expressing respiration intensity has, up to the present, been devised. This unfortunate state of affairs is due to the fact that in spite of

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

the very considerable amount of research that has been carried out on respiration, our knowledge of the details of the process is still far from complete. We know that the process begins with some substrate and finishes with certain final products, and that in the process oxygen may be taken in and carbon dioxide given out. The actual respiration intensity, however, depends upon the rate at which the substrate is broken down by respiratory processes and upon the final products. In other words, the true measure of respiration intensity is the rate at which energy is set free, and this rate may or may not be accurately indicated by the rate at which oxygen is absorbed or carbon dioxide liberated. An experimental method, then, is required that will reveal the rate at which energy is set free as the respiratory substrate disappears, but we do not know with certainty what the substrate is. We know a little about it; for instance, we are reasonably certain that it is, in part at least, frequently a sugar or mixture of sugars. We know that other substances such as fats are frequently changed into sugars and the sugars broken down into simpler substances in the process of respiration. Here again, are we, strictly speaking, correct in considering the fat as the respiratory substrate, or should we consider the sugar as such? Moreover, there is evidence that proteins may act as substrates, though information on this point is very incomplete.

These facts should be kept in mind when studying the data at our disposal relating to respiration intensity and the factors which influence it. We will now proceed to a consideration of these data.

It is to be expected that as the various members of the vegetable kingdom differ so widely from each other morphologically, they also differ just as widely physiologically. Accordingly we find great differences between the respiration rates of different species. Also, as no two

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

individuals of the same species are exactly similar morphologically, so no two such individuals exhibit exactly the same respiration intensity when subjected to similar external conditions. Amongst the most actively respiring plants are the fungi and bacteria. For example, Kostychev, working with a two-day-old culture of *Aspergillus niger* on quinic acid at 16° C., found that it gave out 78.08 cubic centimetres of carbon dioxide per gramme of dry weight. Vignol found that a culture of *Bacillus mesentericus vulgaris* at 16° C. absorbed 48.51 cubic centimetres of oxygen per gramme of dry weight per hour. Some indication of the type of variation exhibited by the respiration intensity of different species of flowering plants is shown in the following table of values obtained by Aubert.

TABLE VII
Respiration Intensity of Various Plants
(From Aubert)

Plant	Temperature in ° C.	Vol. of oxygen absorbed per gramme fresh weight per hour
		c.m.
<i>Cereus macrogonus</i>	12	3.00
<i>Mamillaria cliphatidens</i>	12	5.60
<i>Sedum dendroideum</i>	12	19.00
<i>Mesembryanthemum deltoides</i>	12	57.8
<i>Lupinus albus</i>	12	73.7
<i>Vicia faba</i>	12	96.6
<i>Triticum sativum</i>	13	291.00

In general, shade plants and succulent plants respire less actively than more normal types.

Then again we find that different parts of the same plant respire at different rates. In the higher plants, actively growing regions such as meristems and their adjacent immature tissues respire more actively than tissues which

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

have reached their full development. Reproductive structures such as flowers show respiration intensities above the normal average intensity for the whole plant, and in the flower itself, the gynaecium and androecium respire more actively than the sepals and petals. A considerable amount of experimental data has been published by various workers proving these points, a few examples of which will now be considered.

Kidd, West, and Briggs measured the respiration of sunflower plants throughout their development from germination to maturity, and they also obtained comparative data of the respiration intensity of the different organs of mature plants. Their respiration intensities were expressed as milligrammes of carbon dioxide per gramme of

TABLE VIII
Respiration Intensity of Various Plant Organs
(From Maige)

Species	Temp. in ° C.	Respiration intensity (c.c. CO ₂ per gramme fresh weight per hour)				
		Sepals	Petals	Stamens	Pistil	Leaves
<i>Verbascum thapsus</i>	23.0	0.747	0.177	0.761	0.815	0.382
<i>Penstemon gentianoides</i>	23.5	0.571	0.398	0.602	0.689	0.300
<i>Papaver rhoeas</i>	22.0	0.390	0.367	1.041	0.690	0.332
<i>Lavatera olbia</i>	22.0	0.615	0.303	0.576	0.894	0.394

dry weight of respiring cell-matter per hour at the temperature of 10° C., the external concentration of oxygen being that of the atmosphere. The respiration intensity so expressed they termed the *respiratory index*.

In Table IX (p. 43) are values taken from Kidd, West,

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

and Briggs showing the respiratory indices of the various organs of sunflower plants of different ages.

Comparative data showing the relative respiration intensities of leaves and floral organs of four flowering-plant species are given in Table VIII from results published by Maige in 1911.

VARIATIONS IN RESPIRATION INTENSITY DURING DEVELOPMENT

The variations in respiration intensity during the germination of seeds and during the early stages of the development of seedlings have received a considerable amount of attention from experimenters. De Saussure and a number of other pioneer workers recorded the fact that respiration, as measured by carbon dioxide output during the early stages of germination of seeds, showed a gradual increase with development. This work was carried further by Mayer in 1875 and Rischavi in 1876. These two workers observed the respiration of germinating wheat, the former measuring oxygen uptake and the latter carbon dioxide output. They both found that the respiration intensity increased from a very low value up to a maximum, and then gradually fell off in intensity. This drift in the respiration of wheat during germination and early development of the seedling has been confirmed by a number of later workers. That another cereal, barley, behaves similarly, in so far as the respiration intensity rises from a very low value at the beginning of germination to a maximum and then slowly falls, is clearly shown by the work of Barnell, James and James, Forward and Folkes, Willis and Yemm described during the period 1937 to 1952.

Of non-cereals, Fernandes in 1923 examined the respiration rate of germinating peas, and the results of two of his

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

experiments, conducted at 20° C. and 25° C. respectively, are shown in the curves given in Fig. 2. It will be seen from this figure that Fernandes' results for *Pisum* agree with those obtained with cereal grains, the respiration intensity increasing fairly rapidly to a maximum value and then gradually decreasing.

The authors found that the course of respiration of seeds of the sweet pea, *Lathyrus odoratus*, during germination in the dark depended on whether the testas were present or not. If they were present five phases could be

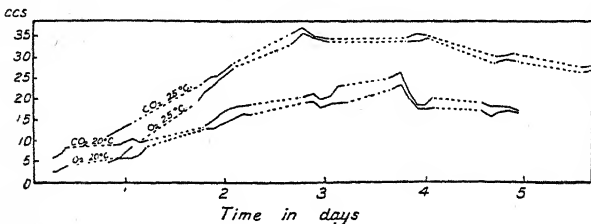


Fig. 2. Curves showing changes in the respiration of *Pisum sativum* as measured by oxygen intake and carbon-dioxide output during the first five days of germination at temperatures of 20° C. and 25° C., respectively. In the upper curve respiration intensity is indicated as c.c. CO₂ or O₂ per 50 seeds per 3 hours, in the lower curve as c.c. CO₂ or O₂ per 50 seeds per 2 hours

(After Fernandes)

distinguished. During the first phase there was a fairly rapid increase in the hourly rate of respiration to a value of about 0.5 mg. of carbon dioxide per gramme of air-dry seed, the rising respiration rate being related to the absorption of water by the seed. This may allow diffusion of gases to take place more readily and perhaps aid in the activation of enzymes which bring about the production of the actual respiratory substrate from the reserves. This phase was followed by one in which the intensity of respiration remained approximately constant until the testa split and

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

during which time no further absorption of water occurred and development appeared to be at a standstill. Following the rupture of the testa, which occurred after varying times in different individuals, there was a rapid increase in respiratory activity to a maximum; this constituted the third phase. We may suppose that this corresponds with further mobilization of reserve material. The maximum value was maintained for a longer or shorter time during the fourth phase, after which the respiratory activity slowly declined.

During the germination of barley grains James and James also distinguished a number of phases in the drift of respiration intensity. In the first phase, as with *Lathyrus*, the respiration intensity increased as water was absorbed by the grains. After about two days this phase passed over into the second phase as indicated by an abrupt change in the rate at which respiration intensity increased, an increase which continued for about six days until the maximum value was reached. This second phase was regarded as corresponding with the mobilization of reserves in the embryo. The length of time during which the maximum was maintained varied very greatly in the experiments of different workers and in some experiments the phase of increasing respiration intensity passed over immediately into that of declining respiratory activity. These differences in behaviour may be partly due to differences in the material used or to the conditions of the experiments. However this may be, all workers have recorded a fall in respiratory activity, but very different explanations have been offered to account for it. In the garden pea, Fernandes thought it was due to depletion of mineral salts, while in *Lathyrus* the authors suggested that it might be due to the conditions of experimentation which tend towards a reduction in the rate of transpiration and so in the conveyance of respirable

material from the cotyledons to the growing-points where respiration is most active. In barley, James attributed the fall from the maximum to the using up of soluble reserves. Another possibility is that during seedling development there may be formed some factor which inactivates part of the respiratory mechanism. This is suggested by work of Beevers and Walker with germinating seeds of castor oil in which they found that the oxidative activity of the small particles (mitochondria) in which the oxidizing enzymes concerned in respiration are located increased from the beginning of germination to the fourth day, after which the oxidative activity fell. A substance was shown to be present in the cells which would reduce the oxidative activity of the particles and which could thus be a factor inactivating part of the respiratory mechanism and so depressing the respiratory activity.

Support for the view that the fall in respiratory activity during the development of the young seedling is related to the conditions of experimentation is supplied by the work of Kidd, West, and Briggs, who followed the drift of respiration intensity of the sunflower (*Helianthus annuus*) throughout its life. Their data show that what they called the *respiratory index*, that is, the carbon dioxide in milligrams evolved per gramme of dry weight per second (see p. 38) remains constant for the first 22 days after germination.

With more mature organs we find the respiration intensity tends to decrease with age of the organ. This is well brought out in the work of Kidd, West, and Briggs with the sunflower. Their observations in this connexion are summarized in Table IX and show how the respiratory index decreases with age in the various parts of the plant.

Although not indicated in the values obtained with sunflower inflorescences, it seems likely that as the floral parts

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

TABLE IX
Changes in Respiratory Index of Sunflower Plants with Age
(From Kidd, West, and Briggs)

Days from germination	No. of plants used	Dry weight of a single plant	Respiratory index (mg. CO ₂ per gm. dry weight per hour) of—				
			Entire plant	Stem	Leaves	Stem apex	Total inflorescences
1	30	0.0225	2.90	—	—	—	—
2	25	0.0223	3.00	—	—	—	—
4	25	0.0242	3.00	—	—	—	—
13	10	0.1009	2.80	—	—	—	—
22	8	0.630	3.00	(3.00)	(3.00)	3.00	—
29	2	4.065	2.30	—	—	—	—
36	1	12.85	1.21	0.81	1.56	—	—
43	1	22.05	1.03	0.69	1.38	—	—
50	1	45.15	0.94	0.46	1.52	2.56	—
59	1	93.20	0.66	0.33	1.32	1.78	—
64	1	98.30	0.71	0.34	1.24	—	—
89	1	294.7	0.48	0.31	0.90	1.13*	1.13
99	1	377.4	0.37	0.25	0.45	0.89	1.04
112	1	818.3	0.26	0.098	0.375	0.75	0.85
136	1	419.5	0.39	0.081	0.44	0.96	0.965

* From this date onwards the stem apex was the inflorescence only.

develop the respiration intensity reaches a maximum and then declines. This is shown in data obtained by Siegelman, Chow, and Biale with developing rose petals over a period of 11 days. For the first four days the petals expanded slowly and during this time the respiration intensity, expressed as cubic millimetres of oxygen absorbed per milligram of dry weight per hour, fell continuously from about 3.05 to about 2.4. Rapid expansion of the petals then took place and the respiration intensity rose rapidly for four days to a value of 4.2. With the petals now fully expanded the respiration intensity slowly fell during the next three days to a value of 3.35. The most active respiration thus corresponded with the period of most active growth.

A somewhat similar drift of respiratory activity was observed by Howard and Yamaguchi in pepper (*Capsicum*) fruits during development, the respiration first falling, then rising to a maximum, and then falling again. The values they obtained for fruits in five progressive stages of development described as immature green, mature green, breakers, half ripe and fully ripe were respectively 116, 88, 73, 82, and 46.

Many fruits, after reaching maturity, remain alive for a shorter or longer time in a state of senescence. The respiratory behaviour of fruits during this senescent phase of their existence has formed the subject of many researches which indicate that in general during this phase the respiration intensity increases up to a maximum value, after which it again decreases.

Dealing with this are researches carried out by Blackman and Parija in 1928 and by Kidd and West in 1930 on the respiration of stored apples. The course of the respiration intensity of apples during storage is shown in Fig. 3, taken from the paper by Kidd and West. In the three

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

curves shown in this figure which indicate the respiratory activity of stored Bramley's Seedling apples at different temperatures, the respiration intensity, in each case, is seen to increase to a maximum value and then to decrease. The increase of respiratory activity to a maximum was called by Kidd and West the climacteric rise. These results have been confirmed for apples by subsequent workers while similar results have been obtained by Gustafson for the tomato, Olney and Wardlaw and Leonard for the banana, Roux for peaches and plums, Pratt and Biale for the avocado, and by Kidd, West, Griffith, and Potter for pears. According to Biale and Young, climacteric rise is not shown by citrus fruits respiring in normal air, but does occur in atmospheres containing 34, 68 or 99 per cent. oxygen.¹

A tentative theory was put forward by Blackman and Parija as a possible explanation of this behaviour of respiration of stored fruits. The essence of this theory is that during the senescent phase the protoplasmic control of hydrolysis, which they term 'organization resistance', is weakened, with the result that hydrolysis increases and produces an increased amount of substrate for respiration. This increased amount of substrate results in a rise in the respiration intensity. Later, the starvation factor comes into operation and the supply of substrate available for hydrolysis diminishes, with the result that the respiration intensity decreases, thus causing the later downward slope of the curve from the maximum shown in Fig. 3.

Subsequently, after examining the chemical changes taking place in stored apples, Kidd gave this theory greater precision. He suggested that the climacteric rise resulted from an increase in the amount of 'active' fructose, the supposed respiratory substrate, in the protoplasm. This was supposed to result from a change in the permeability of the inner plasmatic membrane so that normal inactive fructose,

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

which had accumulated in the vacuole, passed into the protoplasm where it was converted into active fructose. In pears there occurs a further increase in respiratory activity after the climacteric rise. This accompanies breakdown of the flesh of the fruit and is followed by a final fall in respiration rate which in absence of attack by micro-organisms

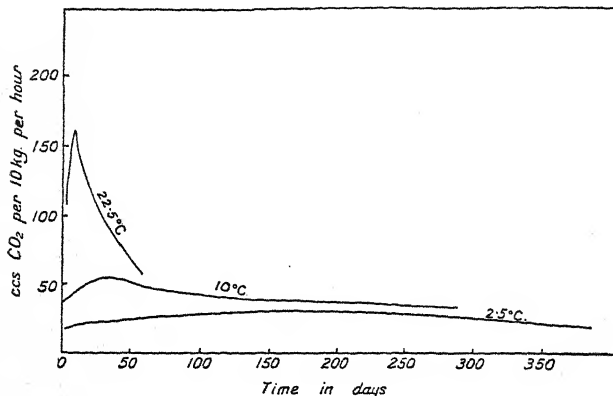


Fig. 3. Curves showing the course of respiration intensity of Bramley's Seedling apples during storage at temperatures of 22.5°C ., and 2.5°C . (After Kidd and West)

would ultimately reach zero. This last rise would be explicable, in Blackman's terminology, as due to a final breakdown in cell organization and so of organization resistance.

Two other factors that may be termed internal, and which influence the intensity of the respiration process in plants, are water content and seasonal periodicity. Various workers have investigated the effect on respiration of changing the water content of the cells of vegetative organs of plants. In some instances this change in water content was brought about by simple desiccation, in others

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

by the osmotic action caused by immersion of the tissue in distilled water or solutions of glucose of different concentrations. In the majority of plants experimented upon in this way, it has been found that, up to a point, increase or decrease in water content brings about an increase in respiration intensity, increase in water content causing greater increase in respiration than decrease in water content. Amongst the exceptions to this rule are *Asparagus* and paeony which show no increase in respiration rate when their water content is reduced. In every case, as one would expect, desiccation, if carried beyond a certain limit which varies with different species, brings about a reduction in respiration intensity which continues to zero as complete desiccation and death of the tissues is reached. In potato tubers it has been found that withdrawal of water results in a decrease in respiration rate; a probable parallel to this is the decrease in respiration intensity exhibited by seeds during the process of ripening. In line with this is the observation of Wager that artificial removal of water from maturing garden peas brings about a reduction in respiratory activity, the rate of respiration falling regularly with progressive loss of water.

A somewhat similar case in which plant tissues lose water and pass into a resting stage is that of mosses and lichens. Many of these plants are able to withstand extreme desiccation while still remaining alive, and are able, when opportunity favours, to re-absorb water and resume their vital activities. A number of workers have investigated the relationship between water content and respiration rate in various moss species, and have shown that the two values always vary in the same direction. By way of example, the following set of figures obtained by Jönsson for *Mnium undulatum* may be taken.

The increase in respiration intensity that is observed in

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

TABLE X

*Effect of Water Content on
Respiration Intensity of Mnium undulatum
(From Jönsson)*

Percentage water content	Carbon dioxide evolved per gramme dry weight per 10 hours c.c.
40	0.750
59	1.350
65	3.900
84	9.680

seeds during the period in which they are absorbing water preparatory to germination is a further instance similar to those discussed above.

The effect of seasonal periodicity on the intensity of respiration presents certain features of interest. Bonnier and Mangin in 1885 found that in perennial plants growing in temperate climates the average respiration was greatest in spring, and showed a slight decrease in summer; a more rapid decrease to a minimum value occurred with the onset of winter, after which the intensity again increased with the return of spring. In the course of this yearly cycle, two subsidiary maxima were observed, the first being related to the expansion of new leaves in the spring, and the second appearing at the time of flower production.

Attention has more recently been drawn to the question of seasonal effect by the experiments of Inamdar and Singh carried out at Benares on the respiration of the leaves of *Artocarpus integrifolia*. It will be noted here that the plants are growing under tropical climatic conditions. In this region spring occurs at the end of March, during which period the plants produce new leaves and shoots. Summer quickly follows spring and is very hot and dry until the end of June, when monsoon rains begin and continue until the end of September. After the rainy season comes a com-

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

paratively dry autumn of about two months' duration, followed by winter, with a relatively low temperature and only very occasional rain.

The general course of respiration of the leaves of *Artocarpus* during the year was found to be as follows: at the beginning of summer, respiration intensity falls to a minimum value which persists until the coming of autumn, it then gradually increases to a maximum level which continues through the winter and spring, again falling as spring gives place to summer.

A striking difference was found to exist between the respiratory behaviour of leaves collected during the summer and those collected during the winter. When leaves were kept in darkness, and their respiration rates measured over periods of several days, leaves collected in winter gave the typical starvation curve in which respiration intensity first rapidly decreased as carbohydrate reserves were depleted until a steady low respiration level was reached and maintained, that is, the change from the 'floating' to the 'protoplasmic' types of respiration of Blackman was observed. In leaves collected in summer and similarly treated, the initial phase was found to be absent, and instead a low, almost uniform, respiration rate was maintained throughout the experiment.

It would appear that the difference between the respiratory intensities of the two seasons might be related in some measure to the relative abundance of respirable carbohydrate substrate, as photosynthetic activity is also at a minimum during summer. More complex causes, however, underlie the matter, as is pointed out by the authors of the work. Some factors apparently bring about a depression of the activity of the metabolic mechanism of the cells of the plant during the summer, this depression affecting both respiration and assimilation alike.

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

Water content cannot be the determining factor as this is practically the same in summer as in winter. Growth activity also bears no relationship to respiratory activity as the former is practically at a minimum while the latter is at a maximum, that is, during autumn and winter; active growth takes place in early spring and during the rains of late summer. As regards temperature, we find a contrast between plants of temperate regions and those of Benares, in that in the former, the minimum respiration intensity is related to the lowest temperature.

THE EFFECT OF EXTERNAL FACTORS ON RESPIRATION INTENSITY

The various factors that we have so far considered, that influence the intensity of the respiratory processes of plants, are more or less entirely dependent upon conditions within, or upon the specific nature of the living protoplasmic system of, the cells. In addition to these are a number of environmental factors that are found to influence plant cells directly or indirectly in such a way as to bring about changes in their respiration rates. These factors may be generally termed external factors, the chief of them being temperature, light, changes in the composition and pressure of the external atmosphere, and the introduction of various chemical compounds into the respiring cells. The investigation of a number of these factors has received a considerable amount of attention, such work being materially helped by the fact that they can be accurately controlled.

Temperature. Attempts have been repeatedly made to analyse the effects of temperature changes on the respiratory processes. Some investigators have gone to the extent of formulating mathematical laws, which are based on experimental data of varying reliability, connecting tem-

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

perature with respiration intensity. In the present state of our knowledge such laws cannot be treated with any confidence as regards their validity, and their discussion here would be of little help. In fact, the only generalization that we can so far make with any measure of certainty regarding the point in question is that, within certain limits, increase in temperature results in increase in respiration rate.

The investigations dealing with the effect of temperature changes on respiration intensity, generally speaking, fall into two categories, namely, those dealing with rapidly developing structures and actively functioning organs, such as seedlings and leaves, and those dealing with resting or senescent organs such as tubers and fruits. Seedlings, owing to the fact that for many reasons they form admirable subjects for experiment, have received considerable attention from time to time. A good deal of the earlier work was carried out with a view to ascertaining the optimum temperature for respiration, but so far, no satisfactory conclusions have been reached with regard to this. Although increases in temperature up to values in the neighbourhood of 45°C. are accompanied by corresponding initial increases in respiration intensity, these high initial rates are not always maintained. This point is well illustrated in Fig. 4, which is taken from the work of Fernandes and shows the effect on the respiration intensity of four-day-old pea seedlings, of changing the temperature from an initial value of 25°C. to various other experimental values. The operation of the time factor is well shown in this figure; it will be seen that raising the temperature of the seedlings to values higher than about 30°C. to 35°C. results in a falling off in respiration rate with time from the initial maximum rate for the temperature under consideration. For temperatures between 0°C. and 45°C. ,

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

increase in temperature results in an increase in this initial respiration intensity, but temperatures above 45°C . result in a progressive lowering of the initial rate (cf. curves for 50°C . and 55°C . in Fig. 4). It would appear then that we

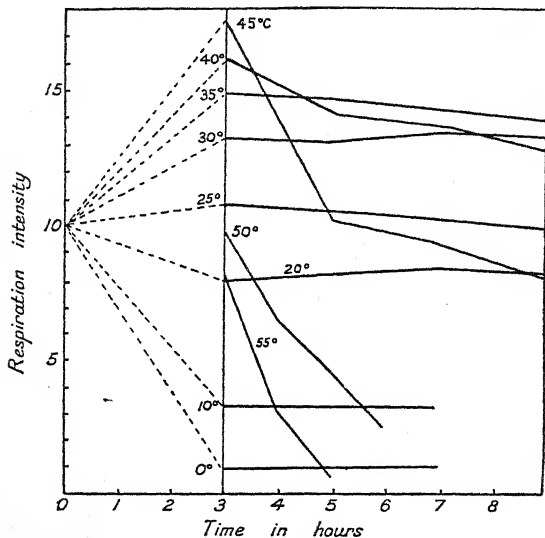


Fig. 4. Curves showing the comparative rates of respiration of four-day-old seedlings of *Pisum sativum* as affected by different temperatures and related to time
(After Fernandes)

must probably consider a temperature in the neighbourhood of 30°C . as the optimum for the experimental material under consideration, as at this temperature there occurs no falling off in the respiration intensity with time. A complication entering into work of this kind, when seedlings in the early stages of their development are used, results from the fact already described on page 39, that the

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

respiration intensity of seedlings germinating under certain conditions does not follow a level course, but shows an initial rise and subsequent fall. Owing to the changes in germination rate produced by different temperatures, the drift of respiratory intensity with time will be affected by temperature, so that it may influence the form of temperature-effect graphs similar to those shown in Fig. 4, causing up-grades or down-grades which are apt to be erroneously interpreted. This has probably happened with some published work on the lines under discussion.

Another aspect of the question is that involving determinations of the temperature coefficient of the respiratory process. Such determinations are made with a view to exploring the possibilities of the connexion between respiration and known chemical reactions which obey the Van't Hoff rule, that is, reactions, the velocity of which is approximately doubled or trebled by a rise in temperature of 10°C . The temperature coefficient is denoted by the symbol Q_{10} and is the ratio of the rate of the reaction or process at one particular temperature to its rate at a temperature 10°C . lower.

The operation of the time factor as outlined above often renders the determination of temperature coefficients for respiration, with any degree of certainty, very difficult; in fact, at temperatures above about 30°C . attempts to make such determinations are probably of doubtful value. At temperatures between 0°C . and 30°C ., in material where the respiration intensity remains reasonably constant, estimations of the temperature coefficient may be of considerable value. In this connexion we have a Q_{10} value of 2.5 obtained by Clausen for wheat, lupin seedlings and *Syringa* flowers between 0°C . and 20°C ., and 2.1 by Blackman and Matthaei for cherry-laurel leaves over a range of 16°C . to 45°C . Gerhart working on the respiration of

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

strawberry fruits obtained a Q_{10} value of 2.5 between 5° C. and 25° C., but with temperatures above 25° C. it was impossible to arrive at any consistent value for the coefficient. Values of the same order of magnitude for the temperature coefficient of the respiration of germinating peas between 0° C. and 20° C. are indicated by the data of Kuijper and Fernandes.

An interesting effect of temperature upon respiration intensity is that described by Müller-Thurgau and Schneider-Orelli for the potato. They investigated the changes in the course of carbon dioxide output by potato

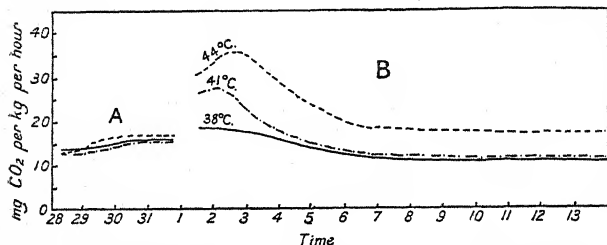


Fig. 5. Curves showing the course of respiration intensity of potato tubers at a temperature of 19° C., at A before and B after they had been kept for eight hours at 38° C., 41° C., and 44° C. respectively. The experiment extended from 28 March to 14 April

(After Müller-Thurgau and Schneider-Orelli)

tubers brought about by maintaining them at various temperatures for eight-hour periods, and then recording their rates of carbon dioxide evolution over periods of fourteen days at a temperature of 19° C. The effect of this treatment is indicated in Fig. 5. It will be seen that the previous heating produces an initial increase in respiration intensity which subsequently falls off. In those tubers which were heated to temperatures higher than 38° C. the falling off ceases while respiration intensity is still higher

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

than it was before the heating was carried out. In other words, heating potato tubers for eight hours at temperatures of 41° C. and 44° C. produced a permanent increase in respiration intensity at normal temperatures.

The effect of temperature on the respiration of stored apples formed part of the already mentioned investigation of Kidd and West (cf. p. 44). The three curves given in Fig. 3 show the course of the respiration intensity during the period of senescence of apples when stored at temperatures of 2.5° C., 10° C., and 22.5° C. respectively. These investigators found that one effect of increased temperature was a shortening of the senescent period beginning with the removal of the fruit from the tree and ending with their death from fungal attack. Another effect was an increase in respiration intensity (see Fig. 3). This influence of temperature on senescent drift and carbon dioxide output was found to be such that the total amount of carbon dioxide liberated from the time of gathering to the time of death was approximately the same, no matter at what temperature the fruit was stored. It was also found that the amount of dry matter lost by the fruit during the senescent period was approximately constant, regardless of temperature.

Light. It was for long assumed that light had no direct effect on respiration, but it was only recently that definite evidence favouring the correctness of this view was forthcoming. This was provided in two ways. The first consisted in measuring the respiration in light and in darkness of certain mutant strains of *Chlorella* obtained by exposure to ultraviolet radiation. These strains, although green, could not photosynthesize, although they could grow and respire in a medium containing a suitable organic substrate. Davis found that the respiration of these forms was unaffected by illumination. The second way consisted in supplying plants with radioactive oxygen (O^{18}) and determining the

change in the radioactivity of the surrounding medium. In this way it was thought possible to get a true value of the oxygen consumed in respiration. From such experiments with *Chlorella* and some other algae and higher plants A. H. Brown concluded that light was generally without any significant effect on respiratory activity. With the blue-green alga *Anabaena*, however, Brown and Webster found that there was a definite effect on the rate of consumption of labelled oxygen which was dependent on both light intensity and oxygen concentration. In low oxygen tensions, those below 0.5 per cent., there appeared to be an inhibition produced by light while in higher oxygen concentrations respiratory activity was enhanced. It was not clear whether these results were to be interpreted as indicating a real effect of light on respiration or whether as regards the apparent inhibition of respiration in low oxygen concentrations this was due to a preferential utilization in respiration of oxygen produced in photosynthesis, which would have the effect of reducing the proportion of labelled oxygen in the total amount used in respiration. This would not explain the stimulation of oxygen consumption in high oxygen concentrations as a result of light. Indirectly, however, in plant organs containing chlorophyll, light may have a very considerable effect on respiration intensity through its influence upon the supply of respiratory substrate resulting from photosynthesis. Light may have an apparent effect on respiration rate owing to its action in causing a decomposition of organic acids with a resulting liberation of carbon dioxide, as mentioned in connexion with the metabolism of succulent plants on page 30.

Concentration of Oxygen. Although the normal respiration in plant organs is dependent upon an adequate supply of oxygen for its continuance, it was at one time widely accepted that considerable variations in the concentration

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

of this gas in the surrounding atmosphere might occur without causing any change in respiration intensity. As pointed out in the discussion on the respiratory quotient (p. 32), when the concentration of oxygen in the medium surrounding respiring tissue falls below a certain value, the respiratory quotient rises progressively with decrease in the oxygen concentration. This can be explained on the view that in these lower oxygen concentrations along with normal aerobic respiration there is also a certain amount of anaerobic respiration or fermentation (p. 6) in which carbon dioxide is evolved without any concomitant absorption of oxygen. As the concentration of oxygen falls the ratio of anaerobic respiration to aerobic production of carbon dioxide increases until in complete absence of oxygen the evolution of carbon dioxide is entirely anaerobic. In discussing the relationship of oxygen concentration to respiration it will thus be convenient to consider separately the effects of oxygen concentration over the upper ranges of this concentration where aerobic respiration alone occurs, and the lower range where the production of carbon dioxide is partly the result of normal aerobic respiration and partly due to the anaerobic process. The lowest oxygen concentration in which the production of carbon dioxide is solely due to normal aerobic respiration is called the *extinction point*, as it is the lowest oxygen concentration in which anaerobic respiration or fermentation is completely extinguished. The extinction point is indicated by the value of the respiratory quotient which is constant in oxygen concentrations above it and rises progressively with decrease in oxygen concentration below it. It is often in the neighbourhood of 4 or 5 per cent. oxygen but varies with different materials and may sometimes be very much higher. Thus Denny working with wheat seedlings found that reduction in the oxygen concentration

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

from that of normal air to the range of 12.6 to 14.4 per cent. had no effect on carbon dioxide production but caused a reduction of oxygen consumption of about 5 per cent. Further reduction, however, in oxygen concentration to the range 9.6 to 10.4 per cent. resulted in the carbon dioxide output being reduced by about 2.9 per cent. Among whole storage organs, Denny found that with potato tubers, reducing the oxygen concentration from 20.9 per cent. to 13.3 per cent. over a period of 25 hours had no effect on carbon dioxide output, while, on the other hand, oxygen intake was reduced by 4.2 per cent. Reduction of the oxygen concentration to 2.4 per cent. over a period of 40.5 hours depressed carbon dioxide output by only 1.73 per cent., while oxygen intake was depressed by 13.8 per cent. With Jerusalem artichoke tubers reduction of oxygen concentration to 14.8 per cent. in 24 hours had no effect on carbon dioxide production but depressed oxygen intake by 5.4 per cent. Depletion of oxygen concentration to 11.8 per cent. in 16.5 hours resulted in a reduction of carbon dioxide output by 1.55 per cent. and of oxygen intake by 5.6 per cent. These results indicate that a little fermentation occurred in these experiments in concentrations of oxygen of 12 to 15 per cent., but this would appear to be related to the conditions of experiment in which oxygen as it was absorbed in respiration was replaced by nitrogen. When the oxygen in the medium surrounding potato tubers, radish, and beetroots was kept constant the reduction in oxygen concentration from that of normal air (21 per cent.) to 15 per cent. brought about a reduction of approximately 5 per cent. in both oxygen absorption and carbon dioxide evolution. However, even higher values of the extinction point have been indicated, particularly in senescent fruits. In apples, for example, the extinction point rises as the senescent phase proceeds until it may ultimately reach 100

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

per cent. oxygen as it has been observed that some fermentation may occur with old senescent apples even in this medium.

Over the ranges of oxygen concentration below the extinction point the amounts of aerobic respiration and anaerobic respiration can be calculated by determining both the carbon dioxide evolved and the oxygen absorbed, the latter giving a measure of the normal aerobic respiration and the former of the total carbon dioxide evolved by both the aerobic and anaerobic processes. From such calculations it appears that as the concentration of oxygen increases from zero, aerobic respiration also increases, the rate of increase decreasing with increase in oxygen concentration. Conversely, the anaerobic component of the evolved carbon dioxide decreases with increasing oxygen concentration, becoming zero at the extinction point. The relation of total evolution of carbon dioxide to oxygen concentration thus depends on the ways in which the aerobic and the anaerobic production of carbon dioxide are related to the concentration of oxygen. In some tissues it has been found that the total carbon dioxide production falls with increase in oxygen concentration until a minimum value is reached and then rises with further increase in oxygen concentration. With apples Blackman found this to be at from 5 to 9 per cent. oxygen. It has sometimes been assumed that this corresponds with the extinction point, but this is not so; it is simply the oxygen concentration in which the sum of the two components of aerobic and anaerobic production of carbon dioxide is at a minimum. Choudhury found that the rate of carbon dioxide evolution by potato tubers in pure nitrogen was much less than in 6.2 per cent. oxygen. With artichoke tubers the same investigator observed a progressive lowering of carbon dioxide output with reduction in oxygen concentration to

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

10.7, 6.7, and 3.5 per cent. Variable results were found with carrot roots; with one root carbon dioxide output in 3.5 per cent. oxygen was lower than that occurring in air, while in another root it was higher, and in pure nitrogen the rate of carbon dioxide might exceed that in air. In atmospheres containing a higher concentration of oxygen than that of this gas in air the respiration rate increased with increase in oxygen concentration so that the maximum rate occurred in 100 per cent. oxygen. It would thus seem that with whole carrot roots there is a minimum value of oxygen concentration above and below which carbon dioxide output increases. Marsh and Goddard came to a similar conclusion regarding the evolution of carbon dioxide from thin slices of carrot root in low oxygen concentrations, the rate of carbon dioxide output increasing with lowering of the oxygen concentration below 5 per cent. Carrot root thus appears to behave similarly to the fruit of the apple.

It is interesting to note that seedlings of wheat and of rice behave differently in low oxygen concentrations. According to Taylor, although in both species the rate of oxygen absorption falls progressively as the oxygen concentration is reduced from that of air to zero, in wheat the rate of carbon dioxide output decreases while in rice it increases with lowering of the oxygen concentration, so that in pure nitrogen the rate of carbon dioxide output is about 50 per cent. higher than in normal air. It is suggested that the ability of rice to grow better than wheat under conditions of poor aeration is related to its capacity to respire under anaerobic conditions.

With oxygen concentrations above the extinction point the respiratory activity of some tissues appears to change little with change in oxygen concentration while with others there is evidence that respiration increases significantly with increase in oxygen concentration. With potato tubers

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

Choudhury found no appreciable difference in respiration intensity with increase in oxygen concentration from 6.2 to 100 per cent. and the respiration rate of Jerusalem artichoke tubers was the same in 100 per cent. oxygen as in normal air. With roots of carrot, on the other hand, respiration was found to increase with increase in oxygen concentration from that of normal air to 100 per cent. According to data published by Blackman, the respiration of apples in 100 per cent. oxygen appeared to be about 1.4 times the rate in normal air, and Forward found that the transference of barley seedlings from normal air to an atmosphere containing 37 per cent. oxygen was accompanied by a slight increase in respiratory intensity. A striking example of these two different effects of oxygen concentration was recorded by James and Beever. They found that the respiration intensity of slices of the spadix of *Arum maculatum* increased with increase in oxygen concentration over the whole range from 2 to 100 per cent. On the other hand, the respiration of slices of the stalk supporting the inflorescence was practically constant over a range of oxygen concentrations from 5 to 100 per cent.

So far in referring to oxygen concentrations a total gas pressure of one atmosphere has been assumed. If, however, plant tissue is subjected to oxygen in pressures much over one atmosphere a phenomenon known as *oxygen poisoning* is encountered which is characterized by a falling respiration intensity and finally by death of the tissue. Thus Caldwell found that apples of the variety Bramley's Seedling when exposed to pure oxygen at a pressure of one atmosphere respired at a steady rate of 5 mg. of carbon dioxide per hour per 100 gm. of fresh weight, while in an atmosphere of oxygen at a pressure of 6 atmospheres the respiration intensity reached a rate of only 3.3 mg. of carbon dioxide per hour per 100 gm. of fresh weight and then

fell steadily, while if the apples were in an atmosphere of oxygen at a pressure of 11 atmospheres the respiration rate fell to zero and the apples turned completely brown in 170 hours. It was shown that the effect was due to the high oxygen content of the medium and not to its pressure as such by comparing the behaviour of apples in pure oxygen at one atmosphere pressure and in a gas mixture at 5 atmospheres pressure containing 20 per cent. oxygen. With these two conditions the respiration rate was about the same, no depression of respiratory activity resulting from the high pressure of the latter medium. With potato tubers Barker and Mapson found that even in pure oxygen at a pressure of one atmosphere there was a reduction in carbon dioxide output although, depending probably on the pretreatment of the tubers, this might be preceded by a period in which there was an increase in respiratory activity. With garden peas, Turner and Quartley found a similar reduction in respiratory activity as a result of exposure to oxygen in a concentration of 5 atmospheres. This effect of oxygen in high pressures appears to be due to an inhibitory action on an enzyme or enzymes concerned in the respiratory mechanism.

Concentration of Carbon Dioxide. Increased concentration of carbon dioxide in the atmosphere generally brings about very marked depression in the respiratory process. Although it has been known since the time of de Saussure that high carbon dioxide concentrations in the surrounding air are injurious to plants, the effect of this factor on plant respiration was not clearly brought out until about a century later and particularly by the researches of Kidd. He examined the effect of various concentrations of carbon dioxide in air, on both the oxygen intake and carbon dioxide output of germinating seeds of white mustard, and also on the carbon dioxide output of cherry-laurel leaves.

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

For germinating mustard seeds, the data resulting from Kidd's experiments are set out in Table XI.

It will be seen that the depressing effect of concentrations up to 50 per cent. carbon dioxide varies roughly with the square root of the concentrations.

With regard to the experiments upon leaves in this connexion, owing to technical difficulties the results obtained are less conclusive, but from the data obtained it appears that the inhibiting effect of high carbon dioxide concentrations is confined to the 'floating' respiration, the 'protoplasmic' respiration being unaffected. Livingston and

TABLE XI

The Retarding Influence of Increased Concentrations of Carbon Dioxide upon the Rate of Normal Respiration in Germinating White Mustard Seeds, Measured by CO₂ Production and Oxygen Consumption
(From Kidd)

	Concentrations of carbon dioxide initially present					
	0%	10%	20%	30%	40%	80%
After 14 hours:						
<u>c.c. CO₂ gain</u>	58	48	38	33	26	17
<u>c.c. O₂ loss</u>	71	57	49	45	38	32
Respiratory quotient	0.82	0.84	0.77	0.73	0.69	0.53
After 40 hours:						
<u>c.c. CO₂ gain</u>	173	158	96	75	61	41
<u>c.c. O₂ loss</u>	197	185	122	104	97	90
Respiratory quotient	0.87	0.85	0.75	0.72	0.63	0.45

Conducted in dim diffuse light. 20 per cent. oxygen present initially in each experiment. 15 gm. of seed set dry on 50 c.c. damp sand and 10 c.c. tap water in each experiment. Results obtained from analyses. Temperature of experiments, 25.5° C. by thermostat.

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

Franck, however, reported that the effect of high carbon dioxide concentration on the respiration rate of leaves of *Hydrangea otaksa* depended on the time of year, being least in December and highest in April. In the former month the respiration in the dark was about the same in air, in 5 per cent. carbon dioxide and in 20 per cent. carbon dioxide, whereas in April the respiration rate in 20 per cent. carbon dioxide was very low. A period of illumination generally had the effect of lowering the respiration rate in this high concentration of carbon dioxide.

With leaves it is possible that carbon dioxide may have an indirect effect on respiration by affecting the degree of stomatal opening. It was shown by Heath that carbon dioxide could induce closure of stomata and so, by thus reducing the area available for gaseous exchange between the leaf and surrounding medium, the concentration of carbon dioxide in the respiring cell might be raised and that of oxygen lowered.

Kidd also experimented with green peas, and suggested that the dormancy of certain seeds is brought about by the presence of high carbon dioxide concentration in the tissues resulting from restriction by the testa of the free passage of gases. It would appear, however, that the whole question of the cause of dormancy requires further investigation in view of the researches of Thornton and Denny. Thornton found that freshly harvested potatoes sprouted in seven days when kept under moist conditions in an atmosphere containing 5 or 10 per cent. of oxygen. On the other hand, they remained dormant for 47 days when the atmospheric oxygen concentration was maintained at 20 per cent. Denny found that the internal atmospheres of *Gladiolus* corms that had been kept in a dormant condition in moist soil at room temperature for periods of 6 to 18 months, contained only 3.8 per cent. carbon dioxide and

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

18.9 per cent. oxygen. During this storage period the respiration rate as measured by carbon dioxide output was low. On removing the corms from the soil the respiration rate rose, reaching a maximum in from 20 to 30 hours, after which it fell back to its initial low level. At the period of maximum respiration the internal atmospheres of the corms contained 30 per cent. carbon dioxide and 7 per cent. oxygen. It thus appears that the low respiration rate characteristic of dormant tissues is not necessarily accompanied by a high concentration of carbon dioxide in the intercellular spaces of such tissues.

A number of investigations on the effect of carbon dioxide concentration on the respiration of fruit have shown that in most instances increasing the concentration of carbon dioxide brings about a reduction in respiratory activity. The fruits examined in which this effect has been observed include apples, pears, and tomatoes examined by Kidd and others, Trout and Gustafson respectively. On the other hand, Overholser, Hardy, and Locklin came to the conclusion that there was no reduction in the rate of respiration of strawberries as a result of accumulation of carbon dioxide in the atmosphere outside the fruit up to concentrations of 7 to 12 per cent.

It would appear that long exposure of some storage organs to high concentrations of carbon dioxide may actually result in an increase in respiration rate. This was found by Thornton with potato tubers, onion and tulip bulbs, and beetroots, although with lower concentrations there was observed the usual depression in respiratory activity with increase in carbon dioxide concentration. Thus, for example, with tulip bulbs in an atmosphere containing 10 per cent. carbon dioxide the respiration rate was less than in normal air, but it was higher than in normal air when the carbon dioxide concentration was 65 per cent.

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

This effect on respiration of prolonged exposure to high concentrations of carbon dioxide would appear to be a secondary effect perhaps related to injury to the tissues.

Ionized Air. Before leaving the question of the changes in respiration intensity produced by variations in the composition of the atmosphere, one other point seems worthy of mention, namely, the effect of ionized air. It has been found that plants, or parts of plants, respire more actively in air that has been ionized by means of radio-active substances than they do in air that has not been so treated. As the gases of the atmosphere are to some extent ionized during daytime by the action of sunlight, this factor probably has some small effect on the respiration of plants growing under natural conditions.

Sugar. The concentration of sugar in culture solutions in which fungi are growing has a marked effect on the respiration intensity of these plants. This fact was demonstrated by Maige and Nicolas and by Kosinski. Various sugars were used in the experiments of Maige and Nicolas, who found that, generally, respiration intensity increased with increased sugar concentration up to a point when plasmolysis set in, when the respiratory rate decreased. It has also been shown that the respiration of etiolated leaves which are poor in sugar, is considerably increased by immersing the petioles of the cut leaves in sugar solution. Also Palladin found that the respiratory activity of starved leaves of *Vicia faba* was greatly increased by floating them on a solution of sucrose. Hanes and Barker also concluded that the respiratory activity of potato tubers was directly related to the concentrations of sugars.

Inorganic Salts. Much work in recent years has indicated that the intensity of respiration is affected by inorganic salts in the external medium. Lundegårdh and Burström found that the respiration of the roots of wheat seedlings

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

was increased in the presence of dilute solutions of a number of chlorides. The resulting increase in respiration rate they called 'anion respiration' as they found that its value was related to the total amount of anion absorbed by the roots. A number of other workers have recorded an increase in respiration rate related to the presence of inorganic salts. Thus Steward and Preston found that the chloride, bromide, nitrate and sulphate of potassium all brought about an increase in the respiratory activity of thin slices of potato-tuber tissue, whereas the chloride, bromide, and nitrate of calcium all brought about a decrease in the intensity of respiration. Bennet-Clark and Bexon, on the other hand, found that calcium chloride as well as potassium chloride brought about an increase in the respiration rate of thin slices of red beetroot. Robertson found the chlorides of potassium, sodium, lithium, calcium, and magnesium all increased the respiratory activity of thin slices of carrot root, but that while this effect was maintained with salts with monovalent cations for many hours, with calcium and magnesium chlorides the level of the respiratory activity soon fell to that of tissue in distilled water or even lower.

Lundegårdh and Burström consider that in presence of salt solutions the total respiration is made up of two independent components, a fundamental respiration unconnected with salt and an anion respiration closely connected with the absorption of salt into the cell against a concentration gradient. They consider that the fundamental respiration involves a catalysis system with manganese while an iron catalysis system is concerned with the anion respiration system. In support of this view is the fact that cyanide inhibits both the anion component of respiration and the accumulation of salt, but does not affect the fundamental respiration.

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

The term salt respiration was proposed by Robertson for the component of respiration related to the absorption of salt. The reason why this increase of respiration resulting from the presence of salt is related to the absorption of anion is due to the fact that when tissue is placed in a salt solution two processes generally occur: an interchange of cations between tissue and external medium and an accumulation of salt, that is of both ions, in the tissue. If the salt respiration is related to the latter process and not to the former it will thus be proportional to the amount of anion, but not to the amount of cation, that passes from the medium into the tissue.

Acids. It is possible that dilute acids may have an effect similar to that of salts. Wehner, measuring intake of oxygen, observed that the aquatic moss *Fontinalis* respired more actively in a mixture of 0.0001 N nitric acid and 0.1 N sodium nitrate than in corresponding solutions of either of these individual compounds.

Various Organic Substances. The effects of various organic poisons on the respiratory processes of plants are of interest. The effect of chloroform upon the respiration of cherry-laurel leaves was investigated by Miss Irving, who found that small doses caused an increase in respiration intensity which might persist so long as the application of the substance was continued. Medium doses caused an initial increase in intensity which was followed by a decrease to much below normal, the larger the dose the more rapid the decrease. Strong doses of chloroform resulted in a rapid fall in respiration rate to zero without any initial increase occurring. Other workers have carried out similar investigations with various plant organs and using a variety of poisons including ether, cocaine, morphine, quinine, chloral hydrate, caffeine, ethyl bromide, formaldehyde, acetone, and ethyl alcohol. Broadly speaking, the results

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

described are very similar to those outlined above. Although vague theories have been advanced in attempts to account for these effects of poisons on plant cells, no generally satisfactory conclusions have been so far reached.

Since undoubtedly a number of enzymes are involved in respiration it is to be expected that any substance which inhibits an enzyme action forming part of the respiratory process will also inhibit respiration. As will be shown in a later chapter, the effect of various enzyme inhibitors on respiration has been used as an argument in theories on the respiratory mechanism.

The Effect of Mechanical Stimulation on Respiration. While engaged in an examination of the respiration of leaves of the cherry laurel, Audus found that if the leaves were removed from the chamber containing them and then replaced after a few minutes, their respiration was considerably higher than before removal. Stroking or bending the leaf had the same effect. A number of other leaves examined subsequently behaved similarly, the increase in respiration rate varying from about 20 to 183 per cent. In an atmosphere of nitrogen the treatment had no effect on the rate of carbon dioxide evolution so that the effect would appear to be related to an oxidation phase in the whole respiration process. An increase in the rate of respiration as a result of handling was also observed by Barker in potato tubers.

If leaves were subjected to a series of such treatments the increase in respiration rate was progressively less with each successive one. The handling, stroking, or bending thus appears to act as a mechanical stimulus and can reasonably be described as mechanical stimulation, but like the action of so many stimuli the mechanism of the action is unknown.

It may also be mentioned that other forms of stimulation have been found to cause an increase in respiration

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

intensity. As examples of this we have the increase in respiration rate exhibited by the carpels of flowers after pollination has taken place, and similar increases in roots undergoing curvature as a result of geotropic response.

The Effect of Wounding on Respiration. It has long been known that when a plant organ is wounded an increase in respiration intensity results. Böhm in 1887 called attention to the fact that when potatoes are cut they exhibit an increased output of carbon dioxide. In 1891, Stich published a more comprehensive account of the phenomenon, having investigated it in other plants in addition to the potato. He also showed that when a potato was cut into two parts, and the cut surfaces joined together again by means of neutral gelatin, the resulting increase in respiration intensity was less than when the cut surfaces were left exposed to the air. Five years later Richards described wounding experiments upon potatoes, carrots, beet, and the hypocotyls and roots of *Vicia* and *Cucurbita*, and various leaves. In all these he obtained, after injury, respiration rates which varied in intensity and duration with the character of the tissue involved and with the extent of the wounding. This increased respiratory activity usually reached a maximum within two days, after which it fell gradually until an approximately normal rate was resumed. In bulky tissues, for example potato and carrot, there occurred during the first two or three hours a sudden increase followed by a rapid decrease in the amount of carbon dioxide evolved. This was due to the escape from the cut surfaces of gas previously enclosed in the tissue.

In order to investigate the cause of this increase in respiration intensity which follows wounding, Hopkins measured the respiration of cut potatoes and also determined the variations in sugar content which occurred in the cut tuber. He found that this increased by from 53 to 68

NORMAL PLANTS UNDER AEROBIC CONDITIONS

per cent. of the original sugar content, and that the maximum occurred several days after wounding, after which it slowly fell. He also found that the maximum sugar content was reached after the time of maximum respiration intensity had been passed; this appeared to be due to the fact that suberization of the wound occurred, causing accumulation of carbon dioxide in the tissue, thereby bringing about a lowering of the respiration rate. It has already been suggested that accumulated carbon dioxide in tissues may be a limiting factor in respiration intensity.

CHAPTER III

Anaerobic Respiration

It is well known that most animals when deprived of oxygen cease to respire and die in consequence. The behaviour of plants is in marked contrast to this. When removed from a supply of oxygen a plant which normally respire aerobically continues to give out carbon dioxide, and the production of this gas may continue for a longer or shorter time according to the plant material. If anaerobic conditions are maintained for too long a time the plant suffers injury and may be killed in consequence, but if the absence of oxygen is not too prolonged, the plant, on return to a normal atmosphere, behaves quite normally and is found to be perfectly healthy. The actual time for which an aerobic plant can withstand anaerobic conditions without injury depends upon various factors such as temperature and food supply. It was reported by Chudiakow in 1894 that maize seedlings in absence of oxygen die in 24 hours at 18° C. and in 12 hours at 40° C., while it has been stated that apples and pears remain uninjured for months in an atmosphere of pure nitrogen or pure hydrogen.

The first definite observation on record of the evolution of carbon dioxide by plants in absence of oxygen was made in 1797 by William Cruickshank, Chemist to the Ordnance and Surgeon of Artillery. We have thought it of interest to quote his own description of one of his experiments, for it

ANAEROBIC RESPIRATION

was none other than the ordinary laboratory method of demonstrating anaerobic respiration which has been performed and observed by many thousands of students in succeeding decades, although pea seeds are usually substituted for barley grains.

January 20th. A quantity of barley, soaked as in former experiments, was introduced into a jar filled with and inverted over mercury. At the expiration of 12 days a very considerable quantity of gas was produced, at least five or six times the bulk of the barley; but nothing like vegetation was perceivable. The gas on examination was found to consist of carbonic acid, being entirely absorbed by lime-water. The barley had not the least sweet taste, nor did it appear to have undergone any sensible change.

This experiment, and other early ones, are perhaps not to be regarded as highly critical, especially in regard to the complete exclusion of oxygen and micro-organisms, but later observations showed, without a doubt, that the conclusion derivable from these early experiments was correct, and that an evolution of carbon dioxide by aerobic plants in absence of oxygen is a general phenomenon. This evolution of carbon dioxide in absence of oxygen was described as 'intramolecular' by Pflüger, who in 1875 observed the phenomenon in the frog, the idea involved in this term being that the carbon and oxygen of the exhaled carbon dioxide must come together within the molecules of the substance of the animal. This term was carried over into plant physiology by Pfeffer, but it is not a very happy one, and the expression 'anaerobic respiration' introduced by Kostychev in 1902 was for many years almost universally employed by writers in English, although 'intramolekulare Atmung' continued in use by some German writers.

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

In establishing the general existence of anaerobic respiration, and in confirming the earlier observation that along with the evolution of carbon dioxide, alcohol is produced, Pasteur and his pupils Lechartier and Bellamy played a prominent part about ninety years ago. This discovery of alcohol as a product of anaerobic respiration at once suggested a comparison of the latter process with yeast fermentation in which the products are also carbon dioxide and alcohol. Although Sachs did not accept the view that there is a connexion between these two processes, and indeed considered 'that the formation of alcohol in the absence of oxygen is an abnormal process throughout, and has nothing to do with ordinary respiration', the evidence since Pasteur's time for the similarity of anaerobic respiration and alcoholic fermentation has grown rather than diminished, as will appear from a consideration of the evidence presented in the next chapter.

As a result of this, there has been a tendency of late years, as mentioned in an earlier chapter, to use the word fermentation to denote the process otherwise known as anaerobic respiration. In favour of this is the fact that a breakdown of carbohydrate to carbon dioxide and alcohol does in certain circumstances occur in presence of oxygen, so that it is not very appropriate to describe the process as anaerobic. On the other hand, in spite of the weight of evidence in favour of the identity of anaerobic respiration with yeast fermentation, there are some instances in which ethyl alcohol does not appear among the end products of anaerobic breakdown, and many more in which the quantity of alcohol produced is much less than the theoretical amount that would be produced in fermentation. A more serious objection to the use of the term fermentation in place of anaerobic respiration is that some of the advocates of its use would not regard anaerobic breakdown as

ANAEROBIC RESPIRATION

respiration, which term they would restrict to those breakdown processes depending on molecular oxygen. As Seifriz pointed out, the older concept of respiration as the processes in living tissues whereby energy is liberated is the broader one and therefore to be preferred. Indeed, as regards the question of the amount of ethyl alcohol produced in anaerobic respiration, only exceptionally is the amount found that we should expect if the sugar is completely respired to carbon dioxide and alcohol. The equation representing this reaction, namely,



indicates that equal molecular quantities of alcohol and carbon dioxide are produced. Since the molecular weights of these substances are respectively 46 and 44 the quantities should also be almost equal in weight ($\text{CO}_2/\text{C}_2\text{H}_5\text{OH} = 0.96$). An approximate equality of output of the two products was actually observed in 1901 with germinating seeds having carbohydrate reserves (*Pisum sativum* and *Vicia faba*) by Godlewski and Polzeniusz, who obtained a ratio of $\text{CO}_2/\text{C}_2\text{H}_5\text{OH}$ varying between 0.975 and 1.096, a relation confirmed by Nabokich in 1903, who obtained a value of 0.984. Subsequent observations, especially by Kostychev and Boysen Jensen, have, however, shown that this agreement with theory is by no means general, as an inspection of Table XII shows.

From this table it will be observed that among higher plants, only exceptionally is the amount of alcohol found in anaerobically respiring tissues equal to that of the carbon dioxide evolved. In potato tubers ethyl alcohol may be completely absent. Where the quantity of alcohol produced is not the equivalent of the carbon dioxide formed several explanations are possible. In the first place the excess of carbon dioxide over alcohol formed might result from the breaking down of some substrate other than carbohydrate.

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

TABLE XII

Ratio of Alcohol to Carbon Dioxide formed in
Anaerobic Respiration

Species	Organ	C_2H_5OH/CO_2	Observer
<i>Mucor racemosus</i>		0.99	Kostychev
<i>Aspergillus niger</i>		0.92	"
<i>Psaliota campestris</i>	fruit body	0.00	"
<i>Pisum sativum</i>	cotyledons	0.65	Boysen Jensen
"	"	0.81	"
<i>Acer platanoides</i>	leaves	0.58	Kostychev
<i>Prunus padus</i>	"	0.51	"
<i>Syringa vulgaris</i>	"	0.56	"
<i>Tropaeolum majus</i>	"	0.45	Boysen Jensen
"	"	0.24	"
"	"	0.17	"
<i>Daucus carota</i>	root	1.02	Kostychev
"	"	0.91	Boysen Jensen
"	"	0.86	"
"	"	0.72	"
<i>Brassica rapa</i>	"	0.49	Kostychev
<i>Lepidium sativum</i>	seedlings	0.57	"
<i>Sinapis</i> sp.	"	0.60	Boysen Jensen
"	"	0.32	"
<i>Pyrus malus</i> , var.	fruit	0.82	Kostychev
<i>Sinap</i> (sweet apples)	"		"
<i>Pyrus malus</i> , var.	"	0.42	"
<i>Anton</i> (sour apples)	"		"
<i>Citrus aurantium</i> (orange)	"	0.70	"
<i>Vitis vinifera</i> (green grapes)	"	0.86	Boysen Jensen
"	"	0.74	"
<i>Vitis vinifera</i> (blue grapes)	"	0.95	"
"	"	0.88	"
"	"	0.81	"
"	"	0.74	"
<i>Solanum tuberosum</i> , var. <i>Magnum bonum</i>	dormant tuber	0.07	Kostychev
<i>Solanum tuberosum</i> , var. <i>Magnum bonum</i>	sprouting tuber	0.00	"
<i>Solanum tuberosum</i> , var.	tuber	0.07	Boysen Jensen
"	"	0.02	"
"	"	0.00	"
"	"	0.00	"

ANAEROBIC RESPIRATION

According to Palladin, the formation of alcohol in anaerobic respiration only takes place when the supply of carbohydrate is sufficient. If this is not so, carbon dioxide is produced by the breaking down of some other cell constituent, and some other product may result.

Godlewski and Polzeniusz stated that alcohol and carbon dioxide were not produced in absence of oxygen by germinating seeds of *Ricinus* which contain fat as the chief food reserve. However, during the germination of this and other fat-storing seeds, *Helianthus annuus* and *Cucurbita pepo*, Leach and Dent found a not inconsiderable output of carbon dioxide under anaerobic conditions.

It is significant in this connexion that Kostychev and Afanassjewa found that *Aspergillus niger*, when grown on carbohydrate media under anaerobic conditions, gave a yield of alcohol which was within a few per cent. of the theoretical amount. On the other hand, when this mould was grown on a peptone medium, no alcohol was produced. This is apparently correlated with the fact that on the latter medium the fungus forms no zymase, the enzyme complex which, as is well known, brings about the splitting of sugar into alcohol and carbon dioxide, whereas on a medium containing sugar these enzymes are produced. It therefore seems likely that the process of anaerobic respiration of *Aspergillus niger* may vary according to whether the mould is grown on sugar or peptone media.

Coming now to higher plants, Forward found that when barley seedlings were transferred to atmospheres containing oxygen in concentrations of 1.3 per cent. or less there was a temporary burst of carbon dioxide production which was considered most probably to have resulted from the breaking down of some other substrate in addition to carbohydrate.

In work with barley roots Nance measured the loss

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

in carbohydrate and production of alcohol and carbon dioxide by tissue kept for four hours in a continuous stream of nitrogen. She found that the amount of alcohol produced agreed well with what would be expected if the carbohydrate lost has been converted to alcohol and carbon dioxide, but that the amount of the latter was much in excess of the theoretical quantity. It would thus appear that the extra carbon dioxide must have arisen from some source other than carbohydrate, such as proteins or organic acids. In apples, Fidler found an excess of carbon dioxide production over that of alcohol, and as he also found the production of carbon dioxide and alcohol together accounted for the combined loss of carbohydrate and malic acid in the fruit there is a strong presumption that malic acid is the source of the excess carbon dioxide.

When roots of maize were placed under anaerobic conditions Neal and Girton found there was at first production of carbon dioxide and alcohol in approximately equivalent quantities but that later the production of carbon dioxide was about 50 per cent. higher than that of alcohol. Determinations of the loss of carbohydrate showed that most, though not all, of the excess carbon dioxide could be attributed to breakdown of carbohydrate, the rest being presumably derived from some other source, perhaps organic acids. This does not account for the divergence between the carbohydrate lost and alcohol produced.

We thus have to consider another possibility, namely, that in the anaerobic breakdown of carbohydrate some substance as well as alcohol is formed. Frequently acetaldehyde has been recognized as arising in small quantities during anaerobiosis and it is generally assumed that this substance is an intermediate product of fermentation which is subsequently reduced to ethyl alcohol. But the amount of acetaldehyde found is usually small, generally

ANAEROBIC RESPIRATION

not more than 1/10 of the alcohol produced, and is insufficient to account for the frequently very much larger divergences which occur between the amounts of carbon dioxide and alcohol produced. It is clear that where the carbon dioxide produced from carbohydrate during anaerobiosis exceeds the amount of alcohol formed, lactic acid may be a product along with alcohol. Thus Phillips found some lactic acid was produced during the anaerobic respiration of barley seedlings. In potato tubers, where little or no alcohol may be produced in anaerobic respiration (see Table XII), it was shown more than half a century ago by Stoklasa that lactic acid was formed during anaerobiosis. This has been confirmed in recent years by Barron, Link, Klein, and Michel, who found that in the anaerobic respiration of thin slices of potato tuber ethyl alcohol and lactic acid were produced in the ratio of 17 to 1. In a detailed investigation on the production of lactic acid in potato tubers Barker and El Saifi found that on transference of the tubers to an atmosphere of nitrogen there was a progressive accumulation of lactic acid for about 15 days, after which the rate of accumulation decreased. On the other hand, the rate of production of ethyl alcohol was at first negligible, but became significant after about 7 days and then continued to increase for the next 2 or 3 weeks. It would thus appear that as the rate of lactic acid production fell, that of ethyl alcohol increased. This would occur if an intermediate in the anaerobic degradation of carbohydrate could be acted upon by two separate enzyme systems, one leading to the production of ethyl alcohol, the other to that of lactic acid.

In thin slices of tomato stem subjected to anaerobic conditions, Link, Klein, and Barron found both ethyl alcohol and lactic acid were produced. The amounts found correspond respectively to 75 per cent. and 13.7 per cent. of

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

the carbon dioxide evolved. In the cotyledons of the mung bean (*Vigna sesquipedalis*), Oota, Fujii, and Sunobe found that under anaerobic conditions there was production of both ethyl alcohol and lactic acid. That lactic acid should be formed under anaerobic conditions in such diverse materials suggests that its production may be a usual phenomenon. This does not rule out the possibility that other substances, at present unknown, may be formed in some tissues during anaerobic respiration.

Where there is an excess of carbon dioxide production over the combined production of alcohol and lactic acid, some of this might result from the loss of carbon dioxide previously bound to some cell constituent and released by the action of the lactic acid produced during anaerobiosis. There is, however, no indication that such a production of carbon dioxide is significant and it would presumably be of short duration.

It is generally supposed that the capacity of aerobic plants to remain alive for a time while deprived of an oxygen supply is directly related to their power of anaerobic respiration which supplies a certain amount of energy. The energy so released is, however, small in comparison with that produced during normal respiration. Thus in aerobic respiration, for every molecule of sugar completely oxidized to carbon dioxide and water, 674 calories are released, whereas the energy released in the splitting of one molecule of hexose to carbon dioxide and alcohol is usually stated to be 25 to 28 calories. Or put in another way, since six molecules of carbon dioxide result from the complete oxidation of one molecule of hexose, and only two molecules of carbon dioxide from the fermentation of one molecule of hexose, for every molecule of carbon dioxide formed in aerobic respiration about 112 calories are released as compared with only about 13 calories per mole-

ANAEROBIC RESPIRATION

cule of carbon dioxide released in anaerobic respiration. An inspection of Table XIV indicates that the rate of anaerobic production of carbon dioxide by a plant or organ is rarely

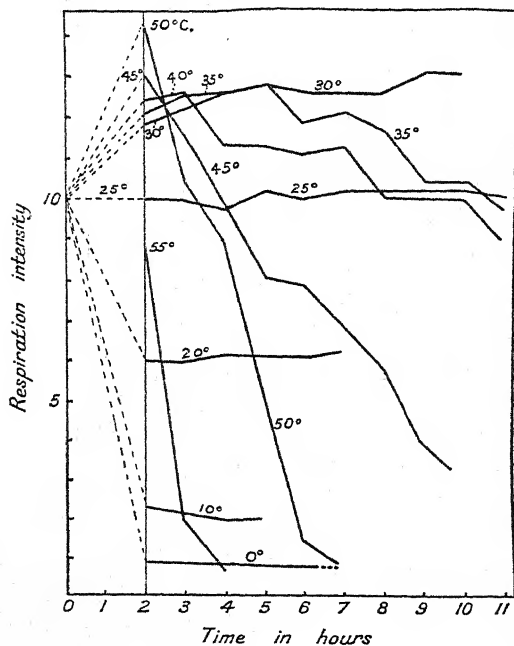


Fig. 6. Curves showing the comparative rate of respiration of 21-hour-old seedlings of *Pisum sativum* as affected by different temperatures and related to time, when respiring in an atmosphere of hydrogen
(After Fernandes)

as high as its rate of aerobic respiration, so that on exclusion of oxygen the energy produced in respiration falls usually to one-ninth or less of its previous value. Only in a few tissues including those of some ripening fruits, as so far

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

observed, is the ratio of the energy released in anaerobic respiration to that released in aerobic respiration higher than this.

Varying external conditions appear to affect anaerobic respiration, as far as can be judged from published results, in very much the same way as they affect aerobic respiration. As regards temperature, the most reliable data concerning the influence of this factor on anaerobic respiration are probably those of Fernandes published in 1923 and dealing with germinating peas respiring in an atmosphere of hydrogen. Fernandes' results with seedlings 21 hours old are shown graphically in Fig. 6. A comparison with the results for seedlings respiring aerobically, shown in Fig. 4, at once reveals how similar are the temperature effects in aerobic and anaerobic respiration. It will be observed that up to 30° C. the rate of respiration remains practically constant with time, but that above this temperature a time factor very obviously operates. The rates of carbon dioxide production in air and hydrogen are compared in Table XIII.

TABLE XIII

*Effect of Temperature on Germinating Peas 21 Hours Old
in Air and in Hydrogen*
(From Fernandes)

Temperature	Respiration in hydrogen	Respiration in air
0	0.87	0.93
10	2.35	2.5
20	6.08	6.32
25	12.9	10.47
30	15.4-16.8	13.2-16.8

These values give average temperature coefficients (Q_{10}) over the range of temperatures 0° to 30° of about 2.67 for respiration in hydrogen and about 2.52 for respiration in air. The values are of the same order of magnitude and the differences are almost certainly within the limits of experi-

ANAEROBIC RESPIRATION

mental error. Probably no conclusion is justified from this similarity apart from a supposition that a purely chemical process determines the rate of respiration whether under aerobic or anaerobic conditions.

As regards the effect of various organic substances on anaerobic respiration, Karslen found that various volatile poisons—ether, benzene, and ethyl alcohol—affected the course of respiration of wheat seedlings in air and in nitrogen similarly. As with aerobic respiration, so with the anaerobic production of carbon dioxide, an inhibitor of an enzyme action concerned in the anaerobic breakdown of carbohydrate will affect the rate of the whole process.

Quite a number of attempts have been made to discover a quantitative relation between the intensities of aerobic and anaerobic respiration of the same organ. The first of these was made by Wortmann in 1880 on germinating seeds of *Vicia faba*; he found the rates of carbon dioxide evolution in air and in a Torricellian vacuum to be the same. Although subsequent measurements confirmed this result for this material, they show that there is in general no such agreement between the intensities of anaerobic and aerobic respiration. In Table XIV are shown the values published by Pfeffer in 1885 for the ratio of respiration

intensity in hydrogen to respiration intensity in air $\left(\frac{R_h}{R_a}\right)$ for a number of plant organs.

From these values it will be observed that the intensity of anaerobic respiration is less than that of aerobic respiration, as measured by rate of carbon dioxide output, in every case except that of germinating seeds of *Vicia faba*, while the actual ratio of the two intensities varies within wide limits. Subsequent determinations of the ratio by other observers have given similarly divergent results, the values varying between 0.177 and 0.181 recorded for

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

TABLE XIV

Ratio of Anaerobic to Aerobic Respiration
(From data published by Pfeffer)

Species	Organ	$\frac{R_a}{R_o}$
<i>Vicia faba</i>	germinating seed	1.03 (mean of four determinations)
<i>Triticum vulgare</i>	seedling	0.49
<i>Cucurbita pepo</i>	"	0.35
<i>Sinapis alba</i>	"	0.18
<i>Brassica napus</i>	"	0.25
<i>Cannabis sativa</i>	"	0.34
<i>Helianthus annuus</i>	"	0.33
<i>Lupinus luteus</i>	"	0.24
<i>Heracleum giganteum</i>	unripe fruit	0.42
<i>Abies excelsa</i>	young leafy shoot	0.077
<i>Orobancha ramosa</i>	flowering stem	0.32
<i>Arum maculatum</i>	"	0.615
<i>Ligustrum vulgare</i>	leafy shoot	0.816
<i>Lactarius piperatus</i>	fruit body	0.32
<i>Hydnum repandum</i>	" "	0.256
<i>Cantharellus cibarius</i>	" "	0.666
Beer Yeast (on lactose)		0.310

seedlings of *Sinapis alba* by Pfeffer in 1885, and 1.3 and 1.1 found for green grapes by Boysen Jensen in 1923.

Boysen Jensen's work on this subject contains observations which suggest that the numbers found for the ratio of anaerobic to aerobic respiration may not always have any definite value; for he showed that in two cases examined, that of leaves of *Tropaeolum majus* at 13° C. and seedlings of *Sinapis alba* at 16° C., the rate of respiration in hydrogen did not remain constant but fell off very definitely and considerably with time. This behaviour of the *Sinapis* seedlings is indicated graphically in Fig. 7, which shows that the average rate of respiration during the fourth hour in hydrogen was only about a quarter of that during the first

ANAEROBIC RESPIRATION

hour. The behaviour of the *Tropaeolum* leaves was very similar. It will be observed from Fig. 7 that in *Sinapis* seedlings, on replacing hydrogen by air the rate of respiration rises to above its original value. In the absence of information regarding the course of aerobic respiration during development, no conclusion can be drawn concerning this increased rate.

Considerable attention has since been paid to the change in rate of carbon dioxide evolution by various tissues on

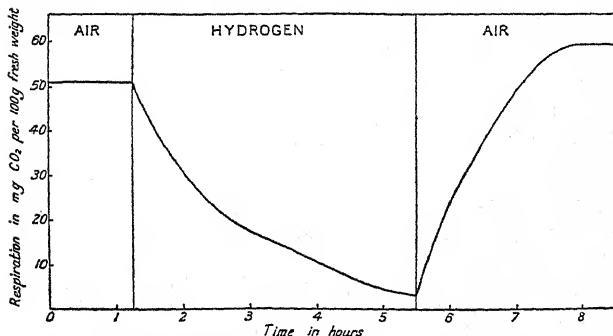


Fig. 7. Graph illustrating the effect on carbon dioxide output of seedlings of *Sinapis alba* when changed from an atmosphere of air to one of hydrogen and vice versa

(From data published by Boysen Jensen)

transference from aerobic to anaerobic conditions. The first significant work on this question was that of Parija on apples. Parija's investigation formed the second of a series of *Analytic Studies of Respiration* carried out in F. F. Blackman's laboratory and published in 1928. The investigation of Blackman and Parija on the respiration of apples in air indicated that the fruit they used, belonging to the variety Bramley's Seedling, did not exhibit uniform behaviour in regard to the course of respiration, but it was concluded that the differences could be explained on the

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

view that the apples belonged to three physiological classes which ripened at different rates. The respiration of these apples on transference to anaerobic conditions, in this case an atmosphere of pure nitrogen, was also dependent on the physiological class. With the slow-ripening apples, transference to nitrogen always brought about an immediate *increase* in the carbon dioxide output which rose to a

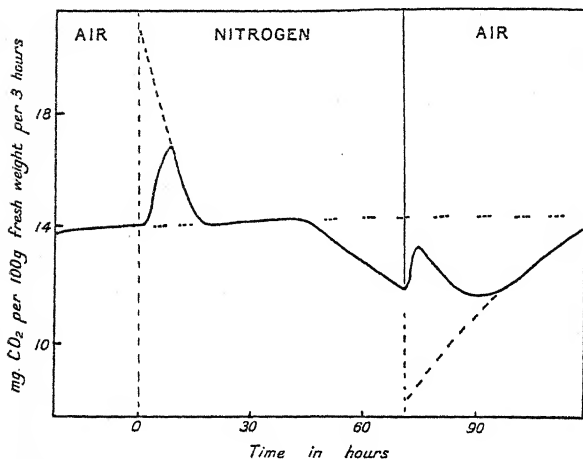


Fig. 8. Graph illustrating the effect on carbon dioxide output of Bramley's Seedling apples belonging to the slow-ripening class, produced by change from an atmosphere of air to one of nitrogen and vice versa (After Blackman)

maximum in a few hours and then fell rapidly to the level of respiration in air, at which level it continued for a shorter or longer time, finally declining rapidly and regularly. A typical example is shown in Fig. 8. With apples of the more rapidly maturing class (or classes) the rate of respiration rose immediately on substitution of nitrogen for air, and then declined slowly with fluctuations to a level

ANAEROBIC RESPIRATION

well above that which would obtain in air. A typical example of this type is exhibited graphically in Fig. 9.

On re-transference to air the carbon dioxide output followed a fluctuating course, first rising, then falling and rising again, but ultimately reaching the normal rate of output for air, although sometimes not until the lapse of two days. Actually, on transference of the apple from air

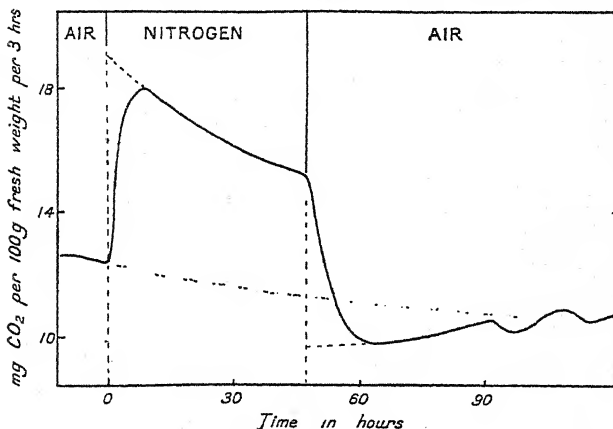


Fig. 9. Graph showing effect of an atmosphere of nitrogen on the carbon dioxide output of Bramley's Seedling apples of the rapidly ripening class

(After Blackman)

to nitrogen, the observed change in carbon dioxide output lagged behind the change in respiration intensity, owing to the time required for the respiratory carbon dioxide to diffuse from the tissues of the apple to the surrounding gas in the plant chamber. It is therefore reasonable to conclude that the actual rate of respiration in nitrogen was highest at the moment of transfer to that gas and fell continually as shown by the broken lines in Figs. 8 and 9. This initial

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

value of respiration rate in nitrogen was found to be about either 1.5 or 1.33 times the rate in air immediately before the replacement of air by nitrogen. As we shall see later, the value of this ratio was thought by Blackman to be of considerable importance in shedding light on the series of reactions involved in respiration.

This higher rate of carbon dioxide output in nitrogen as compared with the rate in air is by no means general. It has, however, been observed in carrot roots by Choudhury and it is possible that high rates of anaerobic respiration are characteristic of senescent fruits. Thus G. R. Hill in 1913 observed the rates of anaerobic respiration as measured by carbon dioxide output were as high, or higher than those of aerobic respiration, in senescent grapes, cherries, and blackberries. It has already been mentioned that Boysen Jensen in 1923 obtained similar results for the first of these fruits. Immature fruit does not, as far as observations go, behave in this way. An important point connected with the above fact is that since three times as much sugar is required to produce a definite quantity of carbon dioxide anaerobically as is required to produce it aerobically, it follows that the destruction of sugar or other respiratory substrate must proceed three or more times as rapidly in absence of oxygen as in its presence.

Work on similar lines was carried out by Leach and Dent on the changes produced in the respiration of germinating seeds when they are successively subjected to atmospheres of air, nitrogen, and again air. The results obtained show that germinating seeds when they are placed in nitrogen exhibit a respiratory behaviour which differs markedly from that observed by Blackman in apples. The species used were *Ricinus*, *Helianthus*, and *Cucurbita* as representatives of fat-storing seeds and *Lathyrus*, *Zea*, and *Fagopyrum* as carbohydrate-storing seeds.

ANAEROBIC RESPIRATION

In the fat-storing seeds the change from air to nitrogen produces an immediate and rapid fall in the rate of carbon dioxide output. This initial fall is followed by a more gradual fall in carbon dioxide production and this last fall continues throughout the anaerobic period.

The change from nitrogen to air produces an opposite effect, the carbon dioxide output increases first of all rapidly and then more slowly as the normal aerobic respiration of the seedlings is resumed.

The carbon dioxide output of carbohydrate-storing seeds shows a similar rapid initial fall when the change from air to nitrogen is made. It also shows a similar rapid rise and subsequent resumption of a normal course when the seedlings are transferred from nitrogen to air. The respiratory behaviour however of carbohydrate seeds in nitrogen during the period immediately following the initial fall in carbon dioxide production is peculiar. After this initial fall, the output of carbon dioxide first rises for a time and then again falls, this last fall being continued throughout the rest of the anaerobic period. It would appear from this that, with carbohydrate-storing seeds, the change from aerobic to anaerobic conditions brings into existence a fresh source of carbon dioxide, but as the substrate which produces this new carbon dioxide output is limited in quantity and is only produced in presence of oxygen, the rise in respiratory activity produced by it can be maintained only for a short time.

The final gradual fall in anaerobic carbon dioxide production shown by all the seeds used might further appear to indicate that in all cases the substrate for anaerobic respiration is dependent in the first place upon the presence of oxygen for its production.

Measurements of the respiratory quotients of the experimental seedlings were made and these have thrown some

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

additional light on the effect of anaerobic conditions. With all the seedlings used, the respiratory quotient falls rapidly for a time when the change from nitrogen to air is made. This fall indicates a high rate of oxygen absorption by the seedlings, a fact which indicates that during the period in nitrogen some readily oxidizable substance accumulates in their cells. The fall in the quotient is followed by a rise which continues until the normal value for the particular seedling is reached.

The numerical relationships between the final respiration rate in air and the initial respiration rate in nitrogen when these various seedlings are transferred from air to nitrogen, are shown in Table XV and may be compared with the values obtained by Blackman for apples. (Cf. p. 88.)

TABLE XV

*The Relationship between Respiration in Air (OR) and
Respiration in Nitrogen (NR) of Young Seedlings*

Seedling	$\frac{NR}{OR}$
<i>Lathyrus odoratus</i>	0.22
<i>Fagopyrum esculentum</i>	0.35
<i>Zea mais</i>	0.25
<i>Helianthus annuus</i>	0.52
<i>Cucurbita pepo</i>	0.40
<i>Ricinus communis</i>	0.51

An examination of the figures given in the above table shows that with carbohydrate seeds (*Lathyrus*, *Fagopyrum*, and *Zea*) a change from respiration in air to respiration in nitrogen results in a reduction in the carbon dioxide output to one-third or less than one-third. With the three fat-storing seeds the reduction is however not so great. In these, the relatively high values of $\frac{NR}{OR}$ may in part be due

ANAEROBIC RESPIRATION

to an insufficient supply of oxygen, when the seedlings are respiring in air, to allow OR to attain its full value. A suggested reason for this is that oxygen, besides being used for respiration, is in fat-storing seeds used for the conversion of fat into carbohydrates.

It has already been pointed out that where the substrate is sugar a ratio of $\frac{NR}{OR}$ exceeding one-third indicates that the rate of sugar destruction under anaerobic conditions must exceed that under aerobic conditions, assuming that the products of aerobic respiration are carbon dioxide and water and those of anaerobic respiration carbon dioxide and ethyl alcohol. The presence of oxygen would then appear to lessen the rate of sugar destruction. This is known as the Pasteur effect after the distinguished investigator who first recorded it. Assuming that carbon dioxide accounts for one-third of the total carbon in the products of anaerobic respiration, an assumption which may not be justified in all instances, the Pasteur effect has been observed not only in senescent fruits but in a number of other tissues, including those of various storage organs such as carrot root, as recorded by Choudhury, Turner, and Marsh and Goddard, roots of red beetroot and tubers of Jerusalem artichoke as described by Choudhury and by Stiles and Dent, and parsnip roots as observed by Appleman and Brown. The significance of the Pasteur effect will be discussed in the next chapter.

It has been suggested that anaerobic respiration may normally take place where diffusion of gases between the tissues and outer air is slow. Such a state of affairs may prevail in germinating seeds provided with testas of a low degree of permeability, in middle parts of bulky tissues such as large fruits, storage roots and tubers and various organs of succulent plants, in woody stems surrounded by

a cork layer, and in organs submerged in water. In all such organs it is at any rate a possibility that the actual oxygen concentration in the respiring cells may be low, while in addition there may be a partial accumulation of carbon dioxide so that the concentration of this is maintained at an unusually high level and so may retard respiratory activity. (Cf. p. 62.)

As regards bulky tissues, there is evidence that respiration may indeed lead to high concentrations of carbon dioxide and low concentrations of oxygen. Boswell and Whiting in 1940 found that in potato tubers weighing about 70 gm. the average concentration of carbon dioxide in the internal atmosphere was about 11.4 per cent. The still higher value of 34.1 per cent. was found twenty years earlier by Magness for potato tubers at 22° C., while the same investigator recorded a concentration of 28.6 per cent. carbon dioxide in carrot roots at 24° C. The corresponding concentrations of oxygen in these two organs were 5.7 and 5.2 per cent. respectively. As these values were the average for whole cylinders cut out with a cork borer it may be concluded that the actual concentrations in the middle regions of the organs were even further removed from those of carbon dioxide and oxygen in normal air. Reference has already been made to the occurrence under certain conditions of high concentrations of carbon dioxide in the internal atmospheres of *Gladiolus* corms, as recorded by Thornton and Denny (cf. p. 64).

On the other hand, Devaux found in 1891 by direct analysis that the internal atmosphere of large cucurbitaceous fruits, as, for example, those of *Cucurbita maxima* and *C. melanosperma*, contained nearly as high a concentration of oxygen as is present in atmospheric air, percentages of this gas of 18.29 and 17.89 being found in these two species, respectively. Merion Thomas found only very small

ANAEROBIC RESPIRATION

quantities of ethyl alcohol and acetaldehyde in freshly gathered apples, namely 0.006 per cent. by weight of the former and 0.0005 per cent. by weight of the latter. These observed facts suggest that, as far as they go, very little anaerobic respiration is likely to occur in fleshy fruits. This does not necessarily mean that the aerating system is adequate to allow of rapid enough diffusion of gases for oxygen respiration to proceed normally. The negligible amount of anaerobic respiration might result from a high concentration of carbon dioxide in the interior of the fruit depressing the rate of anaerobic respiration.

However, the production of carbon dioxide and alcohol and acetaldehyde in large fruits would appear to present a special problem. As long ago as 1896 Gerber had suggested that anaerobic respiration always takes place in these and that through this process arise the alcohols, aldehydes, and esters which are normally present in such fruits. The investigations of Merion Thomas indicate that the production of appreciable amounts of alcohol and acetaldehyde in apples does not result from anaerobic conditions in the interior of these fruits but from changes in the system or systems concerned in the breakdown of carbohydrate. As already noted, only negligible quantities of alcohol and aldehyde were found in freshly gathered apples respiring in air. Kept in an atmosphere of nitrogen, however, similar apples were found by Thomas to accumulate considerable quantities of alcohol, the percentage of this rising to 0.17, 0.25, and 0.39 after 15, 23, and 38 days respectively at 1° C. Thomas therefore concluded that in freshly gathered healthy apples in air no significant amount of anaerobic respiration, or zymasis as he called it, occurred, but that it does as usual under anaerobic conditions.

As apples become senescent, however, the behaviour of the fruit changes. Thomas and Fidler examined the

production of carbon dioxide and alcohol and acetaldehyde in apples at different stages in their development and storage exposed to mixtures of nitrogen and oxygen at 23° C. They found, as would be expected, that with increasing proportions of oxygen in the gas the amount of anaerobic respiration or zymasis was reduced until at the extinction point no alcohol was formed. For apples still on the tree or early in the storage season the extinction point appeared to be not higher than 2.5 per cent. for apples of the varieties Newton Wonder and Bramley's Seedling, but as the season advanced progressively higher concentrations of oxygen were required to suppress zymasis, so that in apples that had been long in storage zymasis might even occur in 100 per cent. oxygen.

Thomas found that zymasis also occurred in apples under aerobic conditions in the presence of high concentrations of carbon dioxide. This CO_2 -zymasis was found to differ from anaerobic zymasis in that during the former process more acetaldehyde accumulated than during anaerobic zymasis. Later Thomas and Fidler found that hydrocyanic acid could also induce zymasis in apples under aerobic conditions. Here also the proportion of acetaldehyde to ethyl alcohol produced was higher than in anaerobic zymasis. These results are important in their bearing on the mechanism of respiration, and further reference will be made to them in this connexion in the following chapter.

The aerobic production of ethyl alcohol was also observed by Gustafson in tomatoes during ripening, the percentage increasing from 0.0011 in small green fruits 1 to 2 cm. in diameter to about 0.014 in red-ripe fruits. Here also the production of ethyl alcohol increased greatly during a period of nitrogen, and, as in apples, a small amount of acetaldehyde was found along with the alcohol.

CHAPTER IV

The Mechanism of Respiration

THE CONNEXION BETWEEN FERMENTATION, ANAEROBIC RESPIRATION AND AEROBIC RESPIRATION

We have seen that normal aerobic respiration consists broadly of the oxidation of carbohydrates or other organic material into carbon dioxide and water. Since this means the breaking down of a complex molecule containing at least six carbon atoms into carbon dioxide with but one, it is extremely unlikely that the respiratory process takes place in a single step. One of the aspects of an inquiry into the mechanism of the respiratory process is, therefore, the determination of the probable stages in the breaking down of the carbohydrate or other complex material utilized in respiration.

Further, we are well aware that under temperature conditions similar to those prevailing in a living organism no breaking down of carbohydrate into carbon dioxide and water takes place if we merely supply carbohydrate with oxygen. A second aspect of the inquiry into the mechanism of respiration is therefore concerned with an examination of the special conditions of the living cell which enable this catabolism to take place. Here obviously we have to consider the various oxidation systems, enzymatic and otherwise, which are known to be present in the cell, as well as

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

enzymes which split off carbon dioxide from more complex substances, and to decide, as far as we are able, what connexion, if any, they may have with the respiratory process.

These two aspects of our problem are, of course, intimately connected, for, from what we know of the characteristics of enzyme actions, it is at least a possibility that every stage in the process is catalysed by its own enzyme. It will therefore not always be possible to separate them in discussion.

In attempting to formulate a theory of the course of respiration in plant cells much use has been made of information obtained from investigations on yeast fermentation. The value of this information in regard to the problem of normal aerobic respiration depends largely on (a) to what extent fermentation by yeast is identical with anaerobic respiration, and (b) the connexion between anaerobic and aerobic respiration. With regard to the former of these questions it has often been assumed that yeast fermentation and anaerobic respiration are the same process. There are several facts in favour of this view. In fermentation, hexose sugar is utilized and the same is frequently the case in anaerobic respiration; where some other substance is utilized it is possible that the substance is first transformed into hexose sugar before it can be utilized for respiration. In both processes carbon dioxide is produced, while in many instances of anaerobic respiration the formation of ethyl alcohol has been demonstrated. Thus, as far as is known, both the substrate and products in anaerobic respiration are frequently the same as those in alcoholic fermentation.

Of course, it does not follow that because the substrate and end products are the same, that these latter have been produced by the same mechanism. There are, however, additional pieces of evidence suggesting that this is indeed

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

so. The enzyme, or rather group of enzymes, known as zymase, which was already known to be the catalyst bringing about the breaking down of hexose to alcohol and carbon dioxide in yeast fermentation, was shown to be present in the cells of a number of higher plants by Stoklasa and Czerny in 1903. Since then there have been isolated from yeast a number of enzymes which are known to form part of the zymase complex. Further reference will be made to these later. It will suffice here to mention that these enzymes which play their respective parts in the various stages of yeast fermentation have also been isolated from various higher plants.

Again, Kostychev showed that acetaldehyde was probably formed as an intermediate product in alcoholic fermentation, and Neuberg showed that by the addition of a sulphite to the fermenting liquor, the aldehyde could be fixed as aldehyde sulphite and so caused to accumulate. Neuberg and Cohen similarly succeeded in fixing aldehyde in the anaerobic respiration of various fungi, while in the same way Neuberg and Gottschalk fixed aldehyde formed in the anaerobic respiration of pea seeds. Previous to this, in 1913, Kostychev, Hübbenet, and Scheloumov had demonstrated the formation of acetaldehyde in anaerobically respiring poplar flowers.

One other point of resemblance between yeast fermentation and anaerobic respiration is the effect of the addition of phosphate. Fermentation of sugar by means of expressed yeast juice or dried yeast is accelerated by the addition of soluble phosphate, while addition of phosphate to the tissues of higher plants killed in various ways also leads to an increased rate of carbon dioxide production. Although Kostychev held that where phosphate brought about an increased rate of carbon dioxide output from dead tissues this was merely due to the effect of the

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

phosphate in increasing the alkalinity of the medium, the school represented in particular by Zaleski, L. Ivanov, and N. Ivanov some fifty years ago held that phosphate did actually accelerate respiration. In 1924 Lyon found that phosphate accelerated both aerobic and anaerobic respiration.

The evidence in favour of the view that alcoholic fermentation is the same process as anaerobic respiration is thus very strong. We are justified, in the absence of any definite evidence to the contrary, in assuming that fermentation of sugar by yeast and anaerobic respiration generally follow the same course.

The relationship between aerobic and anaerobic respiration is at first sight not so clear. That a close connexion exists between these processes was first suggested by Pflüger in respect of certain animals which could carry on respiration anaerobically for a time. His idea was that the respirable material was first broken up anaerobically into carbon dioxide and easily oxidizable products, the latter then being oxidized by atmospheric oxygen to carbon dioxide and water.

Although such authorities as Nägeli and Sachs held the evolution of carbon dioxide in absence of oxygen to be a pathological phenomenon due to injury resulting from absence of oxygen, and therefore to have no connexion with normal respiration, the view of Pflüger was taken over by Pfeffer into plant physiology. He suggested that ordinary aerobic respiration takes place in two stages, the first, a splitting of sugar by a number of steps into alcohol and carbon dioxide, the second, the oxidation by atmospheric oxygen of the alcohol, or some other product formed in one of the steps of anaerobic respiration, into carbon dioxide and water. The first of these stages is independent of oxygen and is in fact the process called anaerobic respiration.

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

This theory found little support at the time, and Pfeffer himself later appeared to give it up. Its lack of support was largely due to two causes. In the first place no constancy was found in the ratio between the intensities of anaerobic and aerobic respiration for different plant organs. In the second place a series of experiments by Diakanov demonstrated that anaerobic respiration of certain fungi could only take place on saccharine media, although aerobic respiration took place in a wide range of other media.

With regard to the first of these difficulties in the way of accepting Pfeffer's hypothesis it was argued that if anaerobic respiration is the first stage of normal respiration, the intensities of the two processes should bear a constant relation to one another. The numbers given in Table XIV, Chapter III, indicate that this is not so, and that the ratio of the respiration rate in hydrogen to that in air may vary widely from plant to plant and organ to organ. This difficulty in the way of accepting the Pfeffer theory is, however, only apparent. If the theory were correct there is no reason why the ratio of the intensities of anaerobic respiration and aerobic respiration should be constant. In the first place, under anaerobic conditions the rate of respiration will depend, at the beginning, on the concentration of the sugar; later, if alcohol accumulates, the latter will tend to retard the process more and more, not merely in accordance with the law of mass action, but because of its toxic effect on the respiring cells. We have already noted that it is highly probable that alcohol accumulates to different degrees in different plant organs. We may therefore add that it seems likely that the rate of anaerobic respiration in different plants and different plant organs is a function of the amount of alcohol accumulated at any time, and that this varies very considerably from plant to plant. Under aerobic conditions, provided the resulting alcohol is

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

oxidized as soon as it is formed (and the absence of alcohol in the tissues would support this view), the rate of aerobic respiration will suffer no retardation on account of accumulation of products.

The second difficulty, which was the outcome of Diakanov's experiments, was proved by Kostychev to be also without foundation. Kostychev repeated Diakanov's work and showed that his experimental results were largely vitiated by the toxic action of the products of metabolism under anaerobic conditions. When this toxic action was eliminated no distinction could be found between saccharine and non-saccharine nutrients such as glycerol, mannitol, and lactic acid when used as substrates for anaerobic respiration.

Thus these particular objections to the theory of a close connexion between anaerobic and aerobic respiration disappear. Further, there are several pieces of evidence in favour of such a connexion. These are as follows:

1. Anaerobic respiration of normally aerobic plants when deprived of oxygen appears to be a universal phenomenon. It is true that Lyon failed to observe the evolution of carbon dioxide from *Elodea* in absence of oxygen, but this appears to be an isolated and exceptional case.

2. The enzyme complex zymase, which, as we know, is concerned in the anaerobic splitting off of carbon dioxide from sugar, appears to be universally present in plant cells. It would thus appear that the process in which zymase is concerned is part of the normal respiratory mechanism of the cell. Since the action of zymase is not suppressed by oxygen, the absence of alcohol production in presence of oxygen cannot be explained as due to the inhibition of zymase.

3. If the first stage (or stages) of normal respiration

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

consists of the anaerobic production of easily oxidizable substances, a period of anaerobic respiration should lead to the accumulation of such substances. Subsequent transference to aerobic conditions should then, owing to the increase in concentration of the substrate for the oxidation process, result in a rate of respiration above the normal. Such an increased rate of respiration after a period of anaerobiosis was observed by Maquenne in 1894 and has subsequently been recorded by Palladin and other observers. Where such an increase is not recognizable it may sometimes be accounted for by the toxic effect of the products of anaerobiosis.

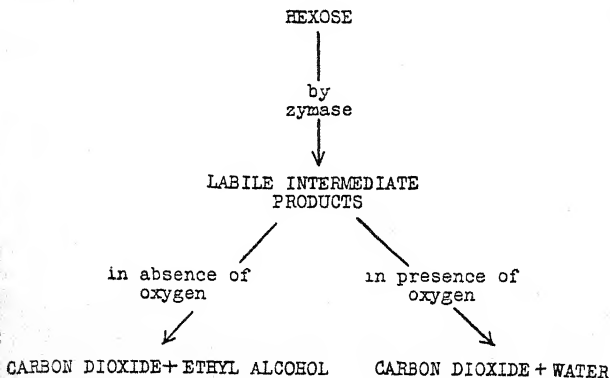
4. It has been put forward by Kostychev that the essential plant oxidizing systems, to which reference will be made shortly, are incapable of oxidizing sugars, but are able to oxidize substances present in fermented sugar solutions. If the first stages of aerobic and anaerobic respiration are the same it is readily understandable that the substance actually oxidized in the process of aerobic respiration is not sugar but a decomposition product of sugar resulting from the action of enzymes of the zymase complex.

5. It has been mentioned that acetaldehyde is in all probability an intermediate product in anaerobic respiration. It is therefore significant that Klein and Pirschle demonstrated the formation of acetaldehyde during normal aerobic respiration. Further, there is every reason to suppose that in fermentation and anaerobic respiration the acetaldehyde is produced by the action of carboxylase, one of the enzymes of the zymase complex, on pyruvic acid. James and Norval have demonstrated the similar formation of acetaldehyde from pyruvic acid in barley tissues.

There is thus a considerable weight of evidence in favour of the theory of a close connexion between anaerobic and

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

aerobic respiration. However, the simple view which considers anaerobic respiration to be the first stage of aerobic respiration is unlikely to be correct, for ethyl alcohol is even less easily oxidized than hexose sugars. Pfeffer's alternative theory has been urged by Kostychev and meets this difficulty. According to this theory, anaerobic respiration or alcoholic fermentation itself takes place in several stages, a formation of labile intermediate substances produced by the action of zymase preceding the production of alcohol. Under anaerobic conditions, these intermediate substances pass over into alcohol, but when oxygen is present the labile substances are oxidized to carbon dioxide and water. This theory may be represented schematically thus:



Current views of the mechanism of respiration may be regarded as an elaboration of this theory, although they have actually developed more or less independently of it.

Not all plant physiologists have accepted the theory of the close connexion of aerobic and anaerobic respiration. Thus in 1923 Boysen Jensen pointed out that in certain

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

plant material, including *Tropaeolum* leaves, *Sinapis* seedlings, *Aspergillus niger*, and *Penicillium glaucum*, the ratio of the rate of anaerobic to the rate of aerobic respiration sinks below $1/3$ without the material suffering injury. Now since one molecule of hexose sugar yields six molecules of carbon dioxide by complete oxidation, and two molecules of carbon dioxide by fermentation or anaerobic respiration, it follows that in such cases anaerobic processes do not split up enough sugar to account for the whole of the aerobic respiration. Subsequently the same author pointed out that D. Müller had prepared an enzyme, glucose oxidase, from *Aspergillus niger*, which could oxidize glucose to gluconic acid directly without the intervention of zymase, so that breaking down of hexose by the latter was not a necessary preliminary for oxidation. Further, E. Lundsgaard found that zymase was easily paralysed by moniodoacetic acid, so that baker's yeast treated with this substance in suitable concentration had very little fermenting power; it could, however, oxidize sugar to carbon dioxide and water, so that again zymase was not necessary in the chain of reactions involved in the complete breaking down of sugar. It was found that glucose oxidase was rather resistant to the action of moniodoacetic acid.

From a consideration of these facts, Boysen Jensen concluded that some organisms are able to oxidize sugar directly without its being first subjected to splitting by zymase.

In 1938 Turner published the results of an investigation on the effects of sodium moniodoacetate on both the aerobic and anaerobic respiration of carrot-root tissue. He found that both processes were inhibited by the reagent in the same way, but that aerobic respiration was affected less than anaerobic respiration. Turner supposed that this effect might result from oxygen reducing the inhibitory influence of the iodoacetate, and that his findings were not out of

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

harmony with the Pfeffer-Kostychev theory of a connexion between aerobic and anaerobic respiration.

Nevertheless, in recent years evidence has accumulated indicating that carbohydrate may be broken down to carbon dioxide and water through a series of reactions which do not involve the fermentation process. This series of reactions has been denoted by a number of names such as the direct oxidation pathway, the oxidative glycolysis pathway, the pentose phosphate pathway, the hexosemonophosphate shunt and the pentose shunt. At the same time the available evidence indicates that the path of carbohydrate breakdown in aerobic respiration involving most of the stages of fermentation is the more general one. As regards this it may be concluded that the breakdown of carbohydrate in aerobic respiration and fermentation follows the same course up to a certain stage, but that the fate of the intermediate products at this stage depends on the presence or absence of oxygen, the usual results being carbon dioxide and ethyl alcohol in absence of oxygen, and carbon dioxide and water in its presence. In low oxygen concentrations both kinds of breakdown may occur together.

THE RESPIRATORY SUBSTRATE

Before discussing in detail the course of fermentation and respiration a consideration of the substrate in these processes is desirable. Already in the first two chapters it has been indicated that these may be carbohydrates, fats, and, in certain conditions, proteins. Carbohydrates which may be drawn on in different plants include not only hexose sugars, chiefly glucose and fructose, but various more complex substances such as disaccharides, particularly sucrose, and polysaccharides including starch, inulin, and the so-called hemicelluloses or reserve celluloses which are

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

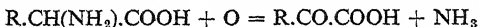
frequently not celluloses at all but condensation products of other sugars such as galactose and mannose. Probably glycosides, compounds of sugar with other groupings, may also provide material for respiration. With many of these more complex carbohydrates it seems probable that as a first step in their utilization they are hydrolysed by the appropriate enzyme system to the hexose sugar level. Thus sucrose, by means of the enzyme sucrase, would be converted to equal quantities of glucose and fructose, inulin by the action of inulase to fructose, starch by the action of amylase and maltase to glucose. In the utilization of starch, at any rate, it is possible that glucose itself is not necessarily produced, for starch is broken down not only by amylase but by the enzyme phosphorylase which in presence of a phosphate effects the breakdown of starch with the production of a compound of glucose and phosphoric acid, glucose-1-phosphate, as the final product of the action, and this substance, as will appear later, can be utilized directly in fermentation.

Where fats are the substances utilized in respiration it is generally supposed that hexose sugar is formed from them and that this can be regarded as the actual substrate. Analyses of germinating seeds and of seedlings make it perfectly clear that there is such a conversion of fat to sugar although the mechanism of this change is not understood. It may be presumed that the fats are first hydrolysed to fatty acids and glycerol by the action of the enzyme lipase and that these are subsequently converted into hexose. But it is possible that material derived from fat and utilized in respiration may not go through a hexose stage, for, as will be shown later, phosphorylated derivatives of glycerol appear as substances formed during the breakdown of hexose in fermentation.

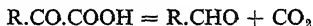
The mode of degradation of proteins when these are used

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

in respiration is even more obscure. It has been pointed out earlier that the end products of protein respiration are carbon dioxide, water, and asparagine or, with complete degradation of the substrate, carbon dioxide, water, and ammonia. It would seem probable that the first stage in the utilization of protein would be the action of protease enzymes in splitting up the protein to its constituent amino acids. The changes by which asparagine and ammonia are then produced are by no means clear. Yemm has pointed out that there is evidence that the aerobic breakdown of amino acids begins with the removal of the $-NH_2$ group with formation of the corresponding α -ketonic acid:



The action of the enzyme carboxylase, one of the earliest constituents of the zymase complex to be recognized, would then bring about the production of the corresponding aldehyde and carbon dioxide:



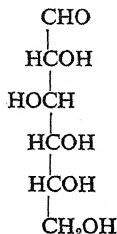
The production of asparagine presumably results from the amination of acids containing four carbon atoms, but this probably involves a series of changes rather than a direct amination of aspartic acid produced immediately from protein hydrolysis as only a comparatively small quantity of this amino acid is usually present.

However, whatever may be the course of protein degradation it is at least possible that this may differ over much of its path from that of normal aerobic respiration of hexose sugar.

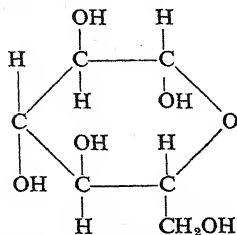
In fermentation and respiration, therefore, although we may regard the usual substrate as hexose sugar, we must be prepared to recognize that reserve substances may give rise to compounds other than hexoses which are utilized in fermentation or respiration.

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

It will be desirable at this point to consider the constitution of the sugars. While a number of different structural formulae were ascribed to the various sugars in the past, it is now generally recognized that the molecule of a simple hexose such as *d*-glucose can react in one of three forms, with an open chain of six carbon atoms:

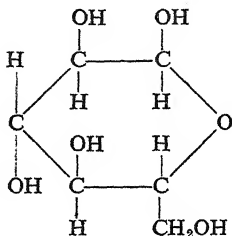


or more usually in a form involving a ring of either five or four carbon atoms and an oxygen atom. The ring formulae proposed by Haworth are now practically universally accepted. According to him, the molecule of ordinary glucose and of other sugars of the aldose series is best represented as a six-atom ring comprising five carbon atoms and one oxygen atom, the sixth carbon atom forming part of a $-\text{CH}_2\text{OH}$ group which constitutes a side chain to the ring. Ordinary glucose exists in two stereo-isomeric forms, α and β , of which the latter may be represented by the formula



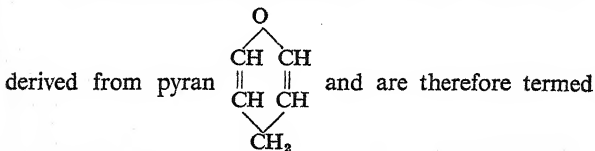
RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

In this sugar the hydrogen atoms are regarded as lying alternately above and below the plane of the ring. In α -glucose the position of the hydrogen atom and the hydroxyl group attached to one of the carbon atoms is reversed so that this stereoisomer is represented by the formula



These two isomers are both obtainable, and in solution can pass by mutarotation from one to the other, while both give stable derivatives such as the well-known α - and β -methyl glycosides.

Sugars possessing such a formula can be regarded as

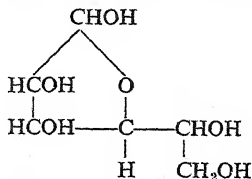


pyranose sugars.

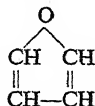
There are, however, a number of derivatives of glucose in which sugar appears to be present in a different form, that is, the atoms appear to be in some other arrangement. The first of these compounds to be recognized was γ -methyl glycoside and subsequently a number of other derivatives of glucose have been obtained in which the sugar part of the molecule has the same structure. Moreover, α and β forms of some, at least, of these derivatives

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

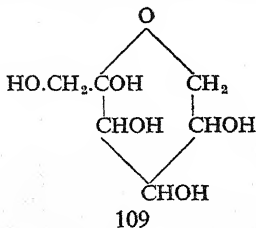
of glucose have been isolated. Their chemical behaviour is such as to indicate that they are built up from a sugar having a five-atom ring and to which the name γ -glucose is given. The formula ascribed to this sugar is



This sugar does not appear to have an independent existence, but since it enters into combination it is clear that the stable forms of glucose must be convertible into it under certain conditions, and that it can be regarded as a labile form of ordinary glucose. Such labile or γ -sugars are said to belong to the furanose series on account of their relation to furan

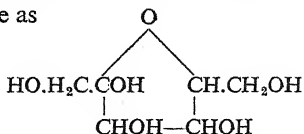


Not only do sugars of the aldose series exhibit γ -forms, but those of the ketose series do also. Of the ketoses, one in particular, fructose, is almost universally present in plants, free or in combination with glucose as cane sugar. The formula of ordinary free fructose can be written as



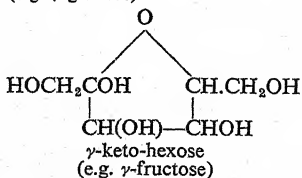
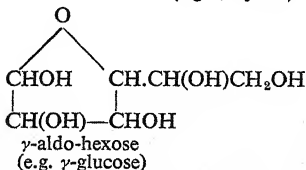
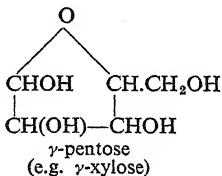
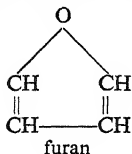
RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

and of γ -fructose as



The γ -form of fructose, like that of glucose, has never been obtained free, but it is in this condition that fructose occurs in combination in plants, for in both inulin and sucrose the fructose part of the molecule is in the γ -form. The free sugar on the other hand is in the normal six-atom (pyranose) ring form.

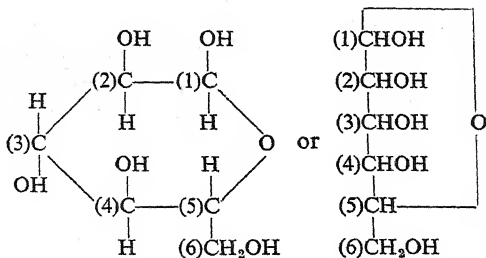
Without going further into this question, it may be pointed out how closely related are the various γ -sugars, including not only those of the hexoses, but also of the pentoses. An inspection of the following formulae will make the relation clear.



THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

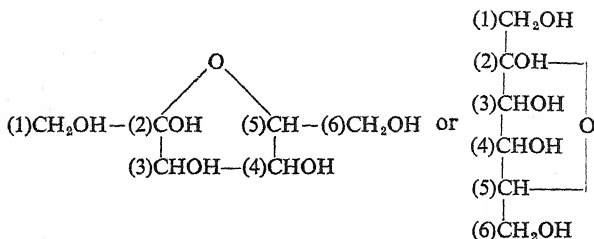
It seems, therefore, that a conversion of γ -fructose into γ -glucose or γ -pentose and vice versa in reactions in the plant involving hexose is not impossible or even improbable. It is well known that the pyranose forms of glucose and fructose readily pass from one to the other in alkaline solution. Further, it is clear that normal glucose is transformed to the labile γ -form in the production of a number of glucose derivatives, as, for example, in the formation of γ -methyl glycoside from methyl alcohol and normal glucose, while not only can γ -fructose derivatives be produced from normal fructose, but the γ -fructose of sucrose is transformed to normal fructose (fructo-pyranose) on the inversion of the latter. Without definite evidence on the point, there is ground for supposing that a conversion in the plant of stable glucose and fructose into the labile and more highly reactive forms of these substances is likely.

Before leaving the question of the constitution of the hexoses it should be pointed out that it is convenient to number the carbon atoms in the sugar molecule. Thus for α -glucose (gluco-pyranose) the carbon atoms are numbered thus:

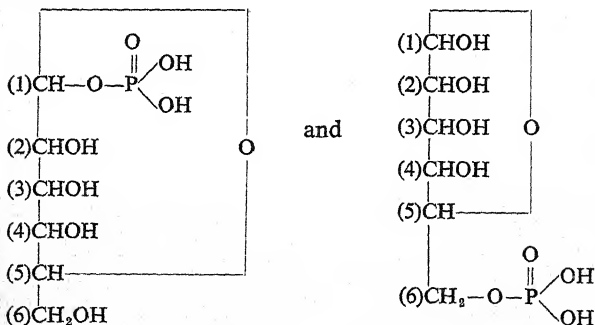


RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

and for γ -fructose (fructo-furanose) thus:



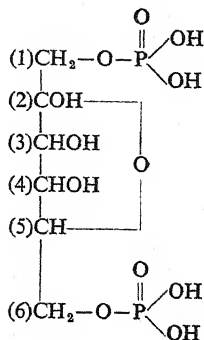
The usefulness of this numbering will be obvious by reference to glucose phosphates which are formed during fermentation, in one of which the linkage of the phosphate grouping is through the hydroxyl attached to the first carbon atom, and the other in which the attachment is through the hydroxyl attached to the sixth carbon atom. It is simple and precise to refer to these two phosphates, whose formulae are



as glucose-1-phosphate and glucose-6-phosphate respectively. Similarly, the hexose diphosphate isolated by Harden and Young during fermentation (see p. 114) is fructose-1,6-diphosphate and if, as has been supposed, the fructose

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

is in the furanose form its structure is represented by the formula



THE COURSE OF FERMENTATION AND ANAEROBIC RESPIRATION

We are now in a position to consider the changes which occur when hexose sugar is broken down to carbon dioxide and ethyl alcohol as in alcoholic fermentation. From what has already been written it will appear that these stages may be identical with those occurring in the anaerobic respiration of carbohydrate, at least when the end products are the same, and that up to a point the changes may be the same as those occurring in normal aerobic respiration. Since very much more definite evidence has been obtained of the course of fermentation than of respiration it will be convenient to deal with the former first and then relate the findings in regard to this to aerobic respiration. At the same time it should be realized that the identity of the first stages in respiration with those of fermentation is still a theory and not an established fact, albeit a theory with strong evidence in its support.

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

Our knowledge of the mechanism of the fermentation process really begins with the work of Buchner, who in 1897 obtained from yeast a product which brought about fermentation of sugar into alcohol and carbon dioxide without the intervention of the living cell. To this product, which possessed the general properties of an enzyme, the name zymase was given.

It was not very long before it became clear that zymase was not a single substance. In 1904 Harden and Young showed that preparations of zymase could be separated into three constituents, namely, (1) a colloidal part, the apoenzyme, (2) an organic crystalloidal part, the coenzyme, and (3) phosphate. The coenzyme was called cozymase by Euler and Myrbäck and is now generally known as coenzyme 1. It is a complex substance the molecule of which is built up from a molecule of a purine called adenine, a molecule of the amide of nicotinic acid, two molecules of a pentose sugar *d*-ribose, and two molecules of phosphoric acid. It is diphosphopyridine nucleotide, and is now often represented by the symbol DPN. Subsequent work has shown that not only is there at least one other coenzyme in the zymase complex, but that the enzyme fraction contains a considerable number of different enzymes each responsible for one particular stage of the fermentation process.

As regards the phosphate fraction, not only did Harden and Young find that fermentation by dried yeast or yeast juice was accelerated by phosphate, they found that in the fermentation of hexose, with the disappearance of the phosphate there was formed a compound of hexose and phosphate, namely, hexosediphosphate $C_6H_{10}O_4(H_2PO_4)_2$. Subsequently it was found that hexosemonophosphates were also formed. It was also reported that whatever sugar was used the hexose was always *fructose* diphosphate in

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

which the fructose was in the active γ or furanose form, and it was therefore supposed until comparatively recently that the significance of this phosphorylation was bringing the hexose into the active form. Recent research has, however, led to a modification of this view.

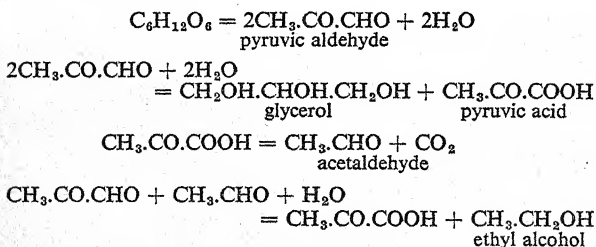
Phosphorylation does not, of course, involve any breakdown of the hexose molecule. The breaking down of the furanose ring to compounds containing fewer than six carbon atoms must follow phosphorylation and is usually termed glycolysis. There is some variation in the meaning attached to this term as regards the extent of the breakdown covered by it. It is usual to limit glycolysis to the production of compounds containing three carbon atoms from hexose or a phosphorylated product of a hexose, but Turner would prefer the term triosis for this process in plants, as the term glycolysis has been widely used to describe the production of lactic acid from glycogen or hexose in animal tissues and yeast under certain conditions, whereas in plant tissues, although as we have seen earlier lactic acid may be among the products of anaerobic respiration, the 3-carbon atom compounds more normally produced are other than this.

Various 3-carbon atom substances had been suggested from time to time as products of glycolysis, including lactic acid ($\text{CH}_3\text{CHOH.COOH}$), methyl glyoxal or pyruvic aldehyde ($\text{CH}_3\text{CO.CHO}$), glyceraldehyde ($\text{CH}_2\text{OH.CHOH.CHO}$), and dihydroxyacetone ($\text{CH}_2\text{OH.CO.CH}_2\text{OH}$), but the discovery by Neuberg and Karczag in 1911 of an enzyme in yeast which effected the removal of carbon dioxide from pyruvic acid with the production of acetaldehyde indicated the probability that the 3-carbon atom pyruvic acid $\text{CH}_3\text{CO.COOH}$ was an intermediate in the process of yeast fermentation, that the carbon dioxide produced arose in this way, and that acetaldehyde was an

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

intermediate between pyruvic acid and the final product ethyl alcohol. Much subsequent work has supported this view. The enzyme, carboxylase, or more properly decarboxylase because it brings about a decarboxylation, was subsequently found to be of widespread occurrence throughout the plant kingdom. It has already been mentioned that there is considerable evidence for the production of acetaldehyde during fermentation of yeast and the anaerobic respiration of other plants.

A scheme for the production of alcohol and carbon dioxide from hexose which took account of these facts was put forward by Neuberg. According to this hexose was first broken down to methyl glyoxal or pyruvic aldehyde, possibly by way of glyceraldehyde. This was followed by a Cannizzaro reaction in which two molecules of methyl glyoxal were concerned, one being reduced to glycerol, and the other oxidized to pyruvic acid. This was then subjected to the action of carboxylase with production of acetaldehyde and carbon dioxide. The latter was given off and the acetaldehyde, reacting with pyruvic aldehyde produced in glycolysis, gave rise to equimolecular quantities of pyruvic acid and ethyl alcohol. The pyruvic acid was then immediately acted upon by carboxylase. This scheme may be summarized thus:



When acetaldehyde has once been formed the second stage

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

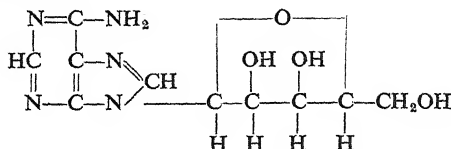
may be eliminated since the pyruvic aldehyde produced in glycolysis at once reacts with acetaldehyde to produce more ethyl alcohol and pyruvic acid which again gives rise to more acetaldehyde. On this scheme only a trace of glycerol will thus be produced, and only ethyl alcohol will accumulate. In support of this scheme is the fact recorded by Neuberg that if the aldehyde is fixed by the addition of a sulphite to the fermenting liquor, so that the last stage is suppressed, there is not only an accumulation of aldehyde sulphite but also of glycerol.

Later work showed that Neuberg's scheme was an oversimplification. The discovery by Embden and his co-workers of phosphoglyceric acid among the products of carbohydrate breakdown and work by Meyerhof and his associates on enzymes present in yeast, indicates that the number of enzymes involved in fermentation is considerably greater than the original Neuberg scheme required, and that phosphorylated compounds are involved until the pyruvic acid stage is reached. The scheme of glycolysis now generally accepted as the most credible is known as the Embden-Meyerhof-Parnas (EMP) pathway after the various workers whose investigations led to its establishment.

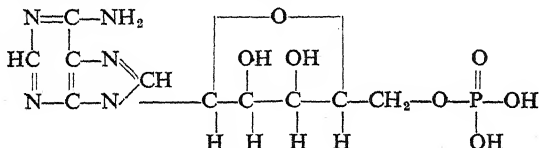
It has already been mentioned that, previous to glycolysis, hexose is combined with phosphate to produce fructose diphosphate. It now appears that the phosphorylation of hexose is not brought about by inorganic phosphate as at one time supposed but by an organic phosphate named adenosine triphosphate. The phosphates of adenosine are substances of the first importance in fermentation and respiration, and it will be appropriate to indicate their nature. Adenosine itself is a nucleoside, that is, a glycoside formed by the union of a pentose sugar with a nitrogen base, the sugar being *d*-ribose and the base adenine or 6-aminopurine, that is, a substance in which $-\text{NH}_2$ replaces

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

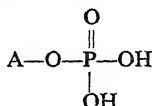
a hydrogen atom in the molecule of purine. The formula of adenosine is thus:



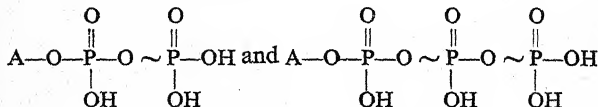
There are three adenosine phosphates. Adenosine monophosphate, or adenylic acid, has the normal structure of an organic phosphate; its formula is thus:



It can be briefly represented by the formula



The constitutions of adenosine diphosphate and adenosine triphosphate were worked out by Lohmann. Their formulae are now generally written:



where the symbol \sim indicates an energy-rich phosphate bond. The distinction between energy-poor and energy-rich bonds was made by Lipmann, the former being found in normally constituted organic phosphates where the

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

phosphate grouping is linked to an alcoholic grouping as in hexose phosphates and in adenosine monophosphate while the latter are found where the phosphate is linked to another phosphate grouping or in some other ways which do not concern us here. When compounds of the first group are hydrolysed the energy released amounts to about 2 to 4 Calories per gram molecule, whereas the splitting off of the terminal phosphate residue from an organic phosphate of the second kind is accompanied by a release of from 12 to 15 Calories. For the sake of brevity it is usual to denote adenosine diphosphate and adenosine triphosphate by the symbols ADP and ATP respectively.

Although the presence and significance of the adenosine phosphates in animal tissues had been recognized several years earlier, the first isolation of adenosine triphosphate from a higher plant, the mung bean (*Phaseolus aureus*), appears to have been achieved by Albaum, Ogur, and Hirschfeld in 1950.

We are now in a position to consider the course of fermentation, and so presumably of anaerobic respiration, in detail. Probably thirteen actions are involved in the degradation of glucose to ethyl alcohol and carbon dioxide.

1. By the action of the enzyme hexokinase, first isolated from yeast by Meyerhof in 1927, and shown to be present in a higher plant, *Phaseolus aureus*, by Millerd, Bonner, Axelrod, and Bandurski in 1951 and in a number of other higher plants by Saltman in 1953, the phosphorylation of glucose is effected by the transfer of the terminal phosphate residue of adenosine triphosphate to glucose, with the production of glucose-6-phosphate and adenosine diphosphate:



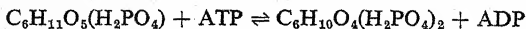
That phosphorylation is effected by adenosine triphosphate and not inorganic phosphate may be explained on

the ground that the phosphorylation requires energy which is provided when the energy-rich bond linking the final phosphate group of the triphosphate is broken, its energy or part of it being utilized in the production of the glucose-6-phosphate.

If starch should form the substrate of fermentation or anaerobic respiration it would appear that glucose-6-phosphate is formed without the intermediate formation of uncombined glucose. From peas and potatoes Hanes obtained a preparation of a phosphorylase enzyme which, in presence of inorganic phosphate, brought about the formation of glucose-1-phosphate, also known as the Cori ester. The glucose-1-phosphate is then, through the action of the enzyme phosphoglucomutase, converted to glucose-6-phosphate. According to Cori and his associates, phosphoglucomutase is of wide distribution in both plants and animals. This enzyme produces an equilibrated mixture of glucose-1-phosphate and glucose-6-phosphate from either.

2. The glucose-6-phosphate is now converted to its isomer fructose-6-phosphate by the action of the enzyme phosphohexose isomerase. This enzyme, first found in muscle extract by Lohmann, acts on either of these hexose-phosphates to produce an equilibrated mixture of the two. The enzyme occurs in yeast and higher plants.

3. The next stage in the process is the production from fructose-6-phosphate of that fructose-1,6-diphosphate first isolated by Harden and Young. This second phosphorylation is also brought about by adenosine triphosphate, the enzyme concerned being phosphohexokinase. The action

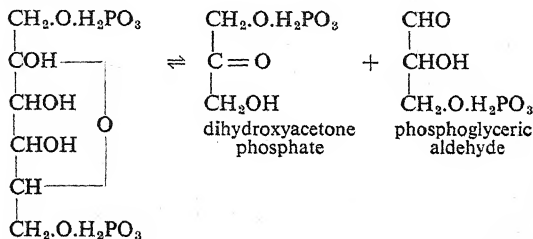


of this enzyme is thus similar to that of hexokinase, but it has not been purified and it is usual to regard it as a separate enzyme. Fructose-1,6-diphosphate has been isolated by

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

both Tankó and Hanes when an extract of peas is allowed to act on starch in presence of inorganic phosphate.

4. In the next reaction the actual splitting of the hexose grouping is brought about by the enzyme known as aldolase or zymohexase.¹ The products of the reaction are two isomeric 3-carbon atom compounds, dihydroxyacetone phosphate and phosphoglyceric aldehyde (glyceraldehyde-3-phosphate):

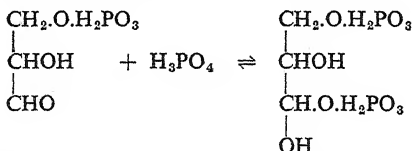


5. The two 3-carbon atom compounds (triosephosphates) produced by the action of aldolase are interconvertible to one another by the action of the enzyme triosephosphate (or phosphotriose) isomerase. An equilibrated mixture of the two triosephosphates results from the action of this enzyme, the greater part of the equilibrated mixture consisting of dihydroxyacetone phosphate. The enzyme has been shown to be present in yeast and was prepared in a purified state by Meyerhof and Beck in 1944. Its presence in an extract of pea seeds was demonstrated by Stumpf in 1950.

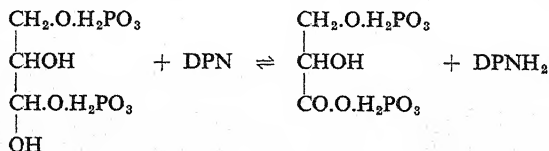
¹ The enzyme preparations originally called zymohexase by Meyerhof and Lohmann were later found by them to involve two enzymes, which they then called aldolase and triosephosphate isomerase, aldolase being the enzyme effecting the splitting of the hexose grouping. Warburg and Christian, who obtained the enzyme in a crystalline form, used the term zymohexase as synonymous with aldolase.

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

6. It is the phosphoglyceric aldehyde which is utilized in the further degradation processes, but degradation does not occur immediately. The phosphoglyceric aldehyde is oxidized to phosphoglyceric acid, but probably several reactions are involved in the production of the acid from the aldehyde. By the action of the oxidizing enzyme triose-phosphate dehydrogenase, which requires the presence of coenzyme 1 (DPN), diphosphoglyceric acid is produced, but this probably takes place in two stages. It is thought that the first step, which requires the presence of inorganic phosphate, results in the production of some intermediate, but this substance has not been isolated. The following equation might represent the reaction:



7. The intermediate so produced is then oxidized by the transference of two atoms of hydrogen to the coenzyme 1 molecule acting as a hydrogen acceptor, whereby diphosphoglyceric acid is produced and reduced coenzyme 1 formed.



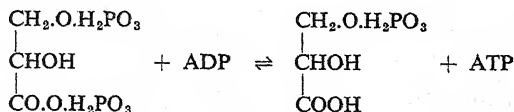
where DPN represents a molecule of coenzyme 1.

The enzyme triosephosphate dehydrogenase, which in conjunction with coenzyme 1 brings about the oxidation of phosphoglyceric aldehyde to diphosphoglyceric acid was demonstrated in 1950 by Stumpf in pea seeds and in the

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

stems, leaves, and roots of pea plants 16 and 22 days old by Gibbs in 1952. In these stems and leaves, but not in the roots, he demonstrated the presence of a similar enzyme requiring coenzyme 2¹ for its operation. In leaves of sugar beet, tobacco, spinach, and sunflower Arnon found triosephosphate dehydrogenase present which could operate with either coenzyme 1 or coenzyme 2, while later, in 1954, Arnon, Rosenberg, and Whatley identified three distinct triosephosphate dehydrogenases in sugar beet leaves, one requiring coenzyme 1 and two requiring coenzyme 2 for their operation.

8. The diphosphoglyceric acid now loses one of its phosphate groupings to adenosine diphosphate, the enzyme catalysing the reaction belonging to a group called by Mrs Needham and Dixon phosphokinases, which transfer phosphate groups from one molecule to another. This particular enzyme is referred to by Dixon as phosphoglyceric phosphokinase. It was identified in pea seeds by Axelrod and Bandurski in 1953. The reaction may be represented thus:



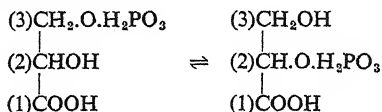
It may be asked whether there is any explanation forthcoming of why the phosphoglyceric aldehyde should not be oxidized directly to phosphoglyceric acid. The explanation as put forward by Kermack is that such a direct oxidation would involve a considerable loss of energy and would be irreversible. Compounds such as diphosphoglyceric acid, with two phosphate groups, have a relatively high energy

¹ Coenzyme 2 is similar to coenzyme 1, but contains three phosphate groupings instead of two. It is thus triphosphopyridine nucleotide (TPN).

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

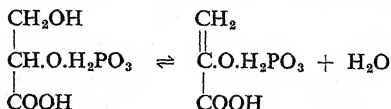
content; that is, the second phosphate grouping has an energy-rich bond, so that the energy liberated by dehydrogenation is not lost but, as it were, trapped in the diphosphoglyceric acid. When the monophosphoglyceric acid is ultimately formed the energy is again not lost but passed over to adenosine diphosphate to form adenosine triphosphate which is utilized for supplying energy in phosphorylations and other processes.

9. An isomeric change is now brought about in the phosphoglyceric acid, whereby the phosphate grouping is transferred from the third carbon atom of the acid to the second, that is, 3-phosphoglyceric acid is converted to 2-phosphoglyceric acid:



The enzyme responsible for this action was recognized by Meyerhof and Kiessling in 1935. It is known as phosphoglyceromutase.

10. By withdrawal of water from the 2-phosphoglyceric acid under the action of the enzyme enolase, also recognized by Meyerhof and Kiessling, the enolic form of phosphopyruvic acid (2-phosphoenolpyruvic acid) is produced:

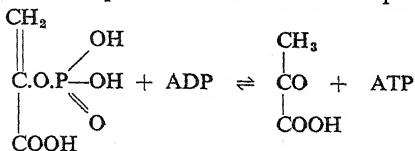


The presence of enolase in pea seeds was demonstrated by Stumpf in 1950.

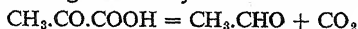
11. The phosphate grouping is now removed from the phosphopyruvic acid with the production of pyruvic acid. According to Dixon the action is effected by the agency of

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

another phosphokinase, pyruvic phosphokinase. The presence of this enzyme in pea seeds was also demonstrated by Stumpf. Adenosine diphosphate acts as a phosphate acceptor with the production of adenosine triphosphate:

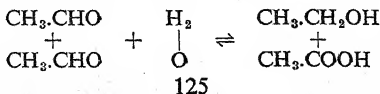


12. The pyruvic acid is now broken down by the action of the enzyme carboxylase as in Neberg's earlier scheme, the products being acetaldehyde and carbon dioxide:



As already mentioned, carboxylase was first recognized in yeast by Neberg and Karczag in 1911, and has since been found in both fungi and higher plants. For its action it requires the presence of a coenzyme termed cocarboxylase which has proved to be the pyrophosphate of thiamine or aneurin (vitamin B₁).

13. With the reaction just described, one of the final products of fermentation or anaerobic respiration, carbon dioxide, is produced and released. The other final product, ethyl alcohol, is presumably formed by the reduction of the acetaldehyde produced in the decarboxylation of pyruvic acid. Two enzymes occur in yeast which will effect this reduction and both require coenzyme 1 for their action. One of these, aldehyde mutase, catalyses a Cannizzaro reaction, that is, a reaction between two molecules of an aldehyde wherein one is reduced and the other oxidized, so that the products when the substrate is acetaldehyde are ethyl alcohol and acetic acid:

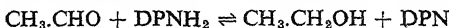


RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

An aldehyde mutase has also been obtained from higher plants but it is said not to require coenzyme 1 for its action.

However, while the action of aldehyde mutase would account for the production of ethyl alcohol, there is no evidence that acetic acid is produced in fermentation so that if it were it would mean that it would have to be transformed immediately to some other substance. If none of this other substance were finally transformed to ethyl alcohol, the ratio of alcohol/carbon dioxide produced would be only 0.5, and where the ratio is less than unity it is a possibility that this enzyme may be operative.

No such complication arises in the consideration of the second enzyme which brings about the reduction of acetaldehyde. This is alcohol dehydrogenase, by the action of which reduced coenzyme 1 provides the hydrogen required for the reduction of the acetaldehyde:



The presence of this enzyme in pea seeds was demonstrated by Stumpf in 1950.

It will be observed that reduced coenzyme 1 is formed in stage 7 of the scheme of carbohydrate degradation, one molecule being formed for every molecule of diphosphoglyceric acid produced. As this ultimately produces one molecule each of carbon dioxide and ethyl alcohol it will be seen that if the alcohol dehydrogenase action is the final stage in fermentation and anaerobic respiration, not only will the ratio of alcohol/carbon dioxide be unity, but the amounts of coenzyme 1 and reduced coenzyme 1 will remain constant when a steady state of carbohydrate degradation obtains.

It has been noted earlier that in some tissues, including potato tubers, lactic acid may arise as a product of anaerobic respiration or fermentation as well as ethyl

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

alcohol and carbon dioxide. In such tissues it is probable that the production of lactic acid from pyruvic acid is brought about through the action of the enzyme lactic dehydrogenase, and the presence of this enzyme in potato tuber tissue was shown by Barron, Klein, Link, and Michel in 1950. These workers also found carboxylase present in the tissue and it would appear that in those tissues where both ethyl alcohol and lactic acid are produced there is a competition for pyruvic acid between these two enzymes.

Almost every one of the reactions summarized above has been effected outside the plant, and a number of the enzymes involved have been prepared in crystalline form. The working out of the details of the fermentation process must be regarded as one of the major achievements of enzyme chemistry of the last twenty years or so.

THE COURSE OF AEROBIC RESPIRATION

Until fairly recently, in contrast with what was known of the course of fermentation, the evidence of the course of aerobic respiration was fragmentary and, for the most part, indirect, but now, as the result of much work carried out during the last twelve years, the probable series of reactions resulting in the complete oxidation of carbohydrate to carbon dioxide and water has been clearly indicated. As we have seen, it is generally assumed that the course of the two processes is the same up to a certain stage, possibly the stage at which pyruvic acid is decarboxylated, and that the fate of these products is generally different in presence or absence of an adequate supply of oxygen. There are a number of facts which support this view. In the first place, since anaerobic respiration is not a normal process in most plant organs, it would seem likely that the enzymes

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

concerned in it must fulfil some function in normal life processes. Secondly, phosphate has been shown to be important for respiration; thus Richards found that deficiency of phosphorus led to a reduction in the respiration rate of barley leaves, while James and Arney found that as the phosphate ester content of excised barley embryos fell between the second and fourth days after the beginning of germination the respiration rate also fell. They also found that the respiration of barley embryos provided with an adequate supply of sucrose increased with increase in the phosphate concentration of the culture solution. Thirdly, a number of the intermediate products of fermentation have been obtained from higher plants. Reference has already been made to the work of Tankó and Hanes in which fructose-1,6-diphosphate was shown to be produced from inorganic phosphate by pea flour. Hanes also demonstrated the formation by pea flour of hexose-6-phosphates. Bonner has demonstrated the presence of fructose-1,6-diphosphate, fructose-6-phosphate, and glucose-1-phosphate in oat coleoptiles. James, Heard, and James also produced evidence to show that phosphoglycerate was among the products when the expressed sap of barley seedlings was incubated with added hexosediphosphate. There was some evidence that triosephosphate might be an intermediate between hexosediphosphate and phosphoglycerate since by adding to the barley sap small quantities of iodoacetate, which inhibits the decomposition of triosephosphate, esters are formed possessing the properties of triosephosphates.

Again James and Norval found that carboxylase was present in barley and that when pyruvic acid was supplied to living barley leaves or embryos the pyruvic acid was broken down and there was an increase in the rate of carbon dioxide output presumably attributable to carboxylase action. Later James and James found that when barley

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

roots were poisoned with reagents which inactivate carboxylase, such as a 0.1 per cent. solution of acetaldehyde or 0.3 per cent. solutions of various aromatic sulphonic acids, pyruvic acid could be recognized in the tissues, while they actually isolated pyruvic acid as the 2,4-dinitrophenyl hydrazone from cut barley leaves treated in the dark with 0.2 per cent. 1-naphthol-2-sulphonic acid. Also Neuberg and Kobel found that phosphoglycerate was converted to pyruvate by preparations of pea and bean, while James, James, and Bunting found that addition of sucrose and adenylic acid, or glucose and adenylic acid, to cell-free barley sap brought about the production of readily identifiable pyruvic acid. Hexosediphosphate and phosphoglycerate were also converted into pyruvic acid by the action of barley sap. Pyruvic acid has also been isolated from the onion (*Allium cepa*) by Bennett and by Morgan, but it has been suggested by Goddard and Meeuse that here it arises from the hydrolysis of alliin to allidine, pyruvic acid and ammonia by the enzyme alliinase and is unconnected with respiration. Bonner found that the addition of pyruvate to oat coleoptile tissue depleted of carbohydrate by removal of the endosperm from the germinated grains led to a 57 to 94 per cent. increase in respiration rate.

There is then some evidence that the course of aerobic respiration is the same as that of fermentation up to the stage in which pyruvic acid is decarboxylated by carboxylase. The widespread presence of this enzyme in higher plants, and James's work to which reference has already been made, suggest that under aerobic, as well as anaerobic conditions, acetaldehyde can be produced. On the other hand, there is now strong evidence that under aerobic conditions pyruvic acid takes part in a reaction with coenzyme 1 and a substance known as coenzyme A which involves both oxidation and decarboxylation and that this

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

reaction can be regarded as the first of a series in which carbon dioxide and water, the final products of aerobic respiration, are produced. At the same time it must be realized that the evidence that the paths of degradation of carbohydrate to the pyruvic acid stage are identical under aerobic and anaerobic conditions is far from complete, and more than one writer has suggested that although similar the paths may not be the same, and that they may even differ in different species.

It has been supposed in the past that from the point where the courses of anaerobic and aerobic respiration differ, under aerobic conditions all the intermediate is converted finally to carbon dioxide and water. There is no reason for assuming that this is generally so. Should the rate of glycolysis be the same under aerobic and anaerobic conditions the ratio of carbon dioxide evolved in aerobic to that evolved in anaerobic respiration should be 3, but only occasionally is this value observed. There is a possibility that the intermediate is only in part oxidized to carbon dioxide and water and that part is built back into the system. As will be shown later, evidence has been advanced to show that this is what actually happens.

However this may be, it is clear that the final stages in aerobic respiration must involve oxidations, and it can be regarded as certain that enzyme systems are concerned. It will therefore be appropriate to consider briefly the various oxidizing enzymes met with in plants.

For our purpose we may regard oxidizing enzymes as falling into three groups, dehydrogenases, peroxidases, and oxidases. Two other enzymes, catalase and carbonic anhydrase, which are not, strictly speaking, oxidizing enzymes, also deserve mention.

1. *Dehydrogenases*

These enzymes act by the transference of hydrogen from one substance (the hydrogen donor or donator) to another (the hydrogen acceptor) whereby the former is oxidized and the latter reduced. Reference has already been made to the action of two of these in dealing with the anaerobic breakdown of carbohydrate. They have been divided into three groups: (a) those requiring coenzyme 1 or the nearly related coenzyme 2 for their action, (b) those possessing an active (prosthetic) flavin group and which do not require a coenzyme, and (c) those which reduce cytochrome and which also do not require a coenzyme. In these enzymes the hydrogen acceptor is the coenzyme, flavin, or cytochrome as the case may be, while the reduced coenzyme, flavin, or cytochrome will act as a hydrogen donor (cf. the actions of triosephosphate dehydrogenase and alcohol dehydrogenase mentioned on pp. 122 and 126). Some authorities include among dehydrogenases those enzymes which transfer hydrogen to molecular oxygen. Where, however, as with a number of plant oxidizing enzymes, the oxidation can be effected *only* by molecular oxygen, it is convenient to consider these as a separate class, the oxidases.

2. *Peroxidases*

These enzymes bring about the oxidation of a number of phenolic compounds, including catechol, pyrogallol, and cresols, in presence of hydrogen peroxide. They are probably universally distributed throughout the plant kingdom for they have been found in nearly all higher plants where they have been sought. Theorell obtained two peroxidases from horse-radish, one of which he was able to prepare in crystalline form. This peroxidase he was able to split into a protein component and an active component which proved to be the iron-containing haematin which could therefore

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

be regarded as coenzyme or active prosthetic group according to whether the haematin is to be regarded as a separate substance or part of the enzyme molecule.

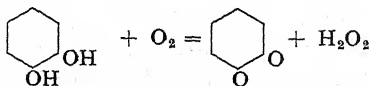
3. *Oxidases*

These are the enzymes which only oxidize by means of molecular oxygen. The best known of these are catechol (or polyphenol) oxidase, cytochrome (or indophenol) oxidase, and ascorbic acid oxidase.

(i) *Catechol Oxidase*. The term oxidase was first applied by Chodat and Bach to the enzyme system present in many plants which produces a blue colour in a tincture of guaiacum gum, the blue colour being an oxidation product of guaiaconic acid, a phenolic constituent of the gum. In 1911 Miss Wheldale showed that all plants giving the guaiacum reaction contained a substance or substances possessing the catechol grouping

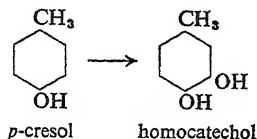


and later she showed that the oxidation of the catechol compounds was effected by an enzyme, and that the products of this oxidation would effect the blueing of a tincture of guaiacum. To this enzyme she gave the name oxygenase, but as it catalyses the oxidation of substances of the catechol type, it is appropriately called catechol oxidase or polyphenol oxidase. The mode of action is not quite clear, but it would appear that both hydrogen peroxide and a quinone are produced:



THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

Not only is the hydrogen peroxide then capable of bringing about further oxidations in presence of peroxidase, but the quinone can also bring about secondary oxidations such as the oxidation of a monohydric phenol to a dihydric phenol:



The diphenol so produced can then be oxidized to a quinone by the catechol oxidase which can thus effect indirectly the oxidation of monophenols to quinones.

Catechol oxidase belongs to a group of enzymes effecting the oxidation of phenolic compounds, which are known on that account as phenolases. Another is laccase, which oxidizes the diphenols uroshiol and laccol present in the latex of the lacquer trees *Rhus succedanea* and *Rhus nucifera* respectively.

Tyrosinase, which has been known for more than half a century, is a phenolase which catalyses the oxidation of the phenolic amino-acid tryptophan and some other phenolic compounds. Because these include monohydric phenols it has also been known as monophenol oxidase. It appears to be distinct from catechol oxidase, but some authorities use the terms monophenol oxidase, polyphenol oxidase, catecholase and tyrosinase as synonymous with phenolase, but it would seem likely that we have here to do with a group of similar enzymes rather than a single enzyme.

It is important to note that catechol oxidase, and probably all phenolases, are copper enzymes; that is, they are proteins with a small amount of copper in their molecules. The amount of copper has been found by various workers

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

to be from 0.2 to 0.3 per cent. of the whole enzyme molecule.

It is also important to note that the action of these enzymes can be inhibited by a number of reagents which include cyanides, sulphides, azides, and carbon monoxide. The inhibition of the enzyme by carbon monoxide is unaffected by light.

(ii) *Cytochrome Oxidase*. In 1925 and subsequent years Keilin showed the presence in yeast and animal tissues of a number of haematin compounds which have definite oxidative properties, and it was not long before it was realized that they were present in all aerobic organisms, plants as well as animals. These substances are the cytochromes which have been described as haemoprotein catalysts and can be regarded as compounds of protein with a haematin prosthetic group.

Originally in yeast four such compounds were distinguished, an unbound protohaematin and three haematin compounds which were at first called cytochrome a' , b' , and c' , respectively, but which are now designated as cytochromes a , b , and c . They differ in their absorption spectra and in other ways; thus whereas cytochromes a and b are insoluble, cytochrome c is soluble and cytochrome c is not so thermolabile as cytochrome b . Several more cytochromes have now been distinguished, some showing a general resemblance to the three cytochromes originally described and denoted by the symbols a_1 , a_2 , b_1 , and so on, while others have been considered sufficiently different to be designated cytochromes d , e , and f . Not all such have been found in plants, but among those that have are cytochromes a_3 , b_3 , b_6 , b_7 , c_1 and another non-autoxidizable one, cytochrome f . This last and cytochrome b_6 appear to be associated with the chloroplasts.

Cytochromes exist in reduced and oxidized forms and

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

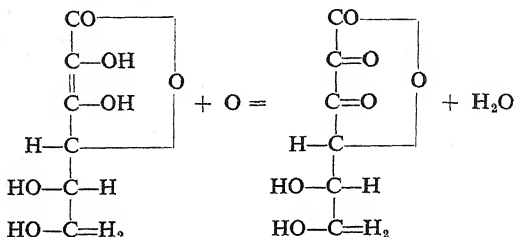
appear to form a chain in transferring hydrogen from a substrate to oxygen. Thus hydrogen received by *b* may be passed on to *c*, and from *c* to *a* and then to a_3 which alone of these is autoxidizable and from which hydrogen is transferred to oxygen. Cytochrome a_3 is thus the oxidase. More than fifty years ago an enzyme of both plants and animals was recognized which brought about the production of indophenol blue from a mixture of α -naphthol and dimethyl-*p*-phenylenediamine. This enzyme was called indophenol oxidase, and it was found to bring about the oxidation of a number of phenolic substances including phenylenediamine, hydroquinone, and catechol. It was shown by Keilin to be distinct from catechol oxidase which can only oxidize phenylenediamine in presence of a catechol compound. Also it does not blue a tincture of guaiacum. Later research has produced strong evidence that indophenol oxidase only brings about the oxidation of reduced cytochrome and that the phenolic compounds are then oxidized by the oxidized cytochrome which is thereby reduced. For this reason the enzyme is now generally known as cytochrome oxidase.

Cytochrome oxidase, being a haematin-protein compound, contains iron, the iron content of the purified enzyme being about 0.3 per cent. Like catechol oxidase, cytochrome oxidase is inhibited by cyanides, sulphides, and azides. It is inhibited by carbon monoxide in the dark, but the inhibition is removed by exposure to light. It retains its activity in very low oxygen concentrations.

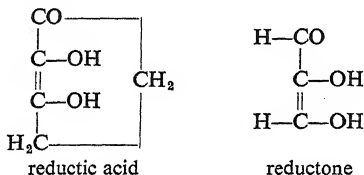
(iii) *Ascorbic Acid Oxidase*. Ascorbic acid, hexuronic acid or vitamin C is widely distributed throughout the plant kingdom. An enzyme effecting the oxidation of this substance was found in 1931 by Szent-Györgyi in leaves of cabbage and has since been found in the tissues of other plants, including species of Leguminosae, Umbelliferae, and

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

Cucurbitaceae. By the action of the enzyme *l*-ascorbic acid is oxidized to dehydroascorbic acid:



A number of substances related to *l*-ascorbic acid are also oxidized by ascorbic acid oxidase. These include *l*-gluco-ascorbic acid, *l*-galactoascorbic acid, reductic acid, and reductone, the last two compounds having the formulae



There is evidence that ascorbic acid oxidase, like catechol oxidase, is a copper protein compound. The action of the enzyme is inhibited by cyanide, but according to James is not affected by azide or carbon monoxide.

(iv) *Glucose Oxidase*. An enzyme bringing about the oxidation of glucose to gluconic acid by oxygen was found by Müller in 1925 in *Aspergillus niger*. The same or a similar enzyme was recorded twenty years later by Coulthard and his associates in *Penicillium notatum* and *P. resticulosum*. This enzyme was named glucose oxidase by Müller and notatin by Coulthard and his co-workers.

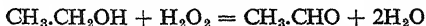
THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

Glucose oxidase is not inhibited by cyanides, sulphides, or azides.

(v) *Lipoxidase*. This is an enzyme which catalyses the oxidation of linoleic acid and some other higher fatty acids and their esters. It is a non-metallic enzyme which has been obtained in crystalline form from soya bean and has been detected in the tissues of some other higher plants. According to Fritz and co-workers this enzyme is responsible for some of the oxygen absorbed in the respiration of etiolated maize seedlings.

4. *Catalase*

This enzyme is widely distributed throughout the plant kingdom and quite possibly is present in all plants. It brings about the decomposition of hydrogen peroxide into water and oxygen. As the oxygen is given off in the molecular state, catalase is not generally regarded as an oxidizing enzyme and its function is supposed to be the destruction of hydrogen peroxide which may be produced as a by-product of metabolism. However, Keilin and Hartree concluded that catalase could take part in oxidations by catalysing the oxidation of a number of alcohols by the hydrogen peroxide produced in some oxidase actions. Thus xanthine oxidase, which occurs in animal tissues, catalyses the oxidation of hypoxanthine by oxygen to uric acid, the oxygen being reduced to hydrogen peroxide. If catalase and ethyl alcohol are added to this system the alcohol is oxidized to acetaldehyde:



Like cytochrome oxidase and peroxidase, catalase contains iron. It is inactivated by cyanides, sulphides, azides, and hydroxylamine. It has been prepared in crystalline form.

5. Carbonic Anhydrase

This enzyme catalyses the decomposition of carbonic acid into carbon dioxide and water and so might function in the release of carbon dioxide from plant cells. So far it has not been recorded for many plant tissues, but has been found in the chloroplasts and other parts of the leaf cells of *Trifolium pratense* and *Onoclea sensibilis*. The enzyme is a zinc-protein compound and is inhibited in its action by cyanides, sulphides, azides, salts of heavy metals and carbon monoxide.

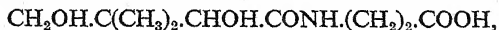
With this brief review of oxidizing enzymes in plants we are in a better position to consider the oxidation phase in aerobic respiration. It has already been shown that there is evidence to justify the Pfeffer-Kostychev theory of a common course of carbohydrate degradation under aerobic and anaerobic conditions up to a certain point. With regard to the actual position of this point James has suggested the possibility of oxidation interrupting the course of glycolysis at more than one stage, but since aerobic respiration is adversely affected by iodoacetate (cf. p. 103), which inhibits the action of triosephosphate dehydrogenase, he thought that degradation of carbohydrate proceeded in air as under anaerobic conditions at least as far as the substrate of this enzyme.

The starting-point for the oxidation phase in aerobic respiration might then be a phosphoglyceric acid, phosphopyruvic acid, pyruvic acid, or acetaldehyde. For animal tissues pyruvic acid has been regarded with favour as the starting-point of the oxidation process, and now the most generally accepted opinion is that pyruvic acid is the starting-point of the oxidation process in plants also. More than one scheme has been proposed of the mechanism of the oxidation, but the best known and the one now most

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

generally favoured is that known as the Krebs cycle or the tricarboxylic acid cycle, according to which a molecule of pyruvic acid reacts with one of oxaloacetic acid to produce a molecule of citric acid and one of carbon dioxide. By the action of the enzyme aconitase the citric acid is converted through *cis*-aconitic acid to isocitric acid, which then by the action of isocitric dehydrogenase is oxidized to oxalosuccinic acid, which, through the action of oxalosuccinic decarboxylase is split into α -ketoglutaric acid and carbon dioxide. The α -ketoglutaric acid is then oxidized by the action of α -ketoglutaric dehydrogenase to succinic acid and carbon dioxide. By the action of succinic dehydrogenase and fumaric dehydrogenase, fumaric acid and malic acid are produced by successive oxidations. By the action of malic acid dehydrogenase oxaloacetic acid is then reformed from malic acid. This series of reactions can be represented thus:

(1) The pyruvic acid is first subjected to decarboxylation and oxidation. According to Reed and de Busk this takes place in a series of three reactions in which a number of coenzymes are involved, namely coenzyme A, coenzyme 1, and cocarboxylase, the last being in combination with a sulphur-containing substance α -lipoic acid. Coenzyme A is thought to be a condensation product of pantothenic acid,

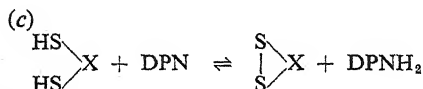
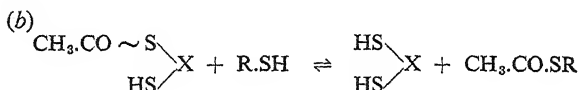
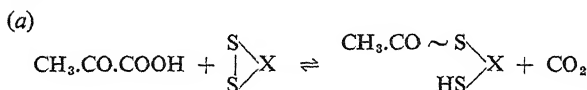


with adenosine diphosphate or adenosine triphosphate and cysteamine (β -mercaptoethylamine, $\text{NH}_2(\text{CH}_2)_2.\text{SH}$).¹ As a result, carbon dioxide is removed from the pyruvic acid, hydrogen is removed by coenzyme 1, and the acetyl residue

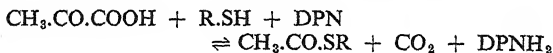
¹ But according to Basford and Huennekens four different forms of coenzyme A can be present in commercial preparations of this substance.

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

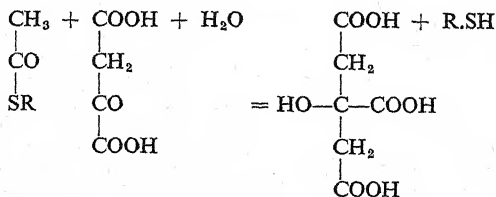
CH_3CO combines with coenzyme A to produce acetyl-coenzyme A. If coenzyme A is represented by R.SH and the compound of cocarboxylase and α -lipoic acid in its reduced and oxidized forms by $\begin{smallmatrix} \text{S} \\ | \\ \text{S} \end{smallmatrix} \text{X}$ and $\begin{smallmatrix} \text{HS} \\ \text{HS} \end{smallmatrix} \text{X}$ respectively, the series of reactions may be represented thus:



The overall equation for these three reactions is then:

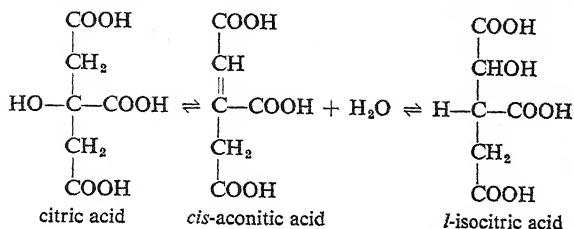


(2) By the action of an enzyme known as the condensing enzyme the acetyl-coenzyme A now reacts with oxaloacetic acid with the result that citric acid is produced and coenzyme A re-formed:

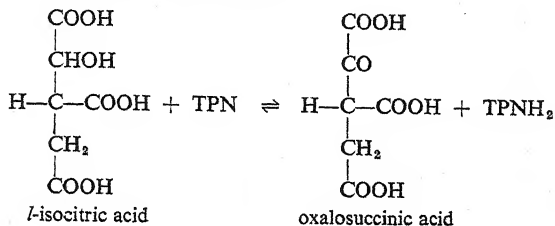


THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

(3) by aconitase:

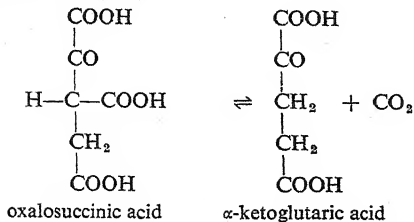


(4) by isocitric dehydrogenase:



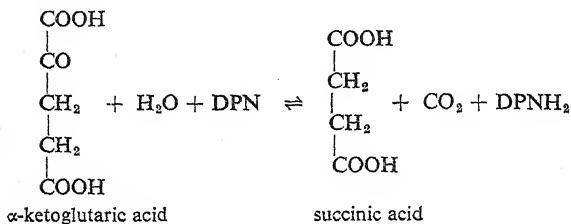
This dehydrogenase requires coenzyme 2 as hydrogen acceptor.

(5) by decarboxylation, through the action of oxalosuccinic decarboxylase:

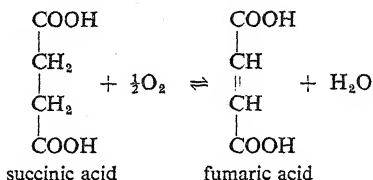


RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

(6) The α -ketoglutaric acid is now subjected to oxidation and decarboxylation, succinic acid being formed and carbon dioxide released. As in the reactions noted under (1) above, both coenzyme 1 and coenzyme A appear to be involved.



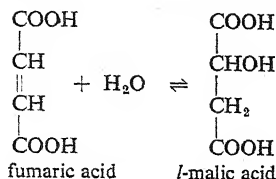
(7) by succinic dehydrogenase:



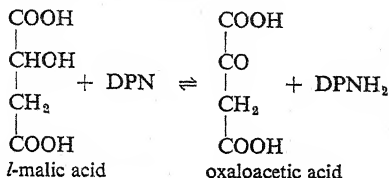
Under anaerobic conditions methylene blue, thionine and several other dyes can act as hydrogen acceptors in the action of succinic dehydrogenase, but under aerobic conditions the hydrogen is accepted by oxygen through the action of the cytochrome oxidase system. The action is not really understood, but it could be explained by the hydrogen first reducing the cytochrome, the reduced cytochrome then being converted back to cytochrome by the action of cytochrome oxidase in presence of oxygen which accepts the hydrogen from the cytochrome system. The net result is thus expressed by equation 7 above.

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

(8) by fumarase:



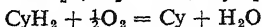
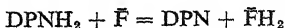
(9) by malic dehydrogenase:



With the re-formation of oxaloacetic acid the cycle is complete and this acid can again condense with more pyruvic acid. The net result of this cycle of operations is the loss of pyruvic acid, three molecules of carbon dioxide being produced for every molecule of pyruvic acid which disappears. There are also formed four molecules of reduced coenzyme, but since reduced coenzyme does not accumulate there must be a mechanism for their oxidation. This presumably is effected through the action of an oxidase or oxidases, so that the hydrogen accepted by the coenzyme is ultimately passed on to oxygen. Thus, if the oxidase concerned is cytochrome oxidase the reduced coenzyme 1 could be oxidized by an enzyme (cytochrome reductase) in which the active group is a flavin which accepts hydrogen from the reduced coenzyme 1 and passes it on to cytochrome. The hydrogen is then passed on to oxygen through the mediation of the cytochrome oxidase system. The

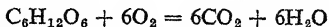
RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

oxidation of reduced coenzyme 1 can then be summarized thus:



where the flavoprotein is represented by the symbol $\bar{\text{F}}$.

There is also a molecule of reduced coenzyme 1 produced in stage 7 of the breakdown of glucose (p. 122). Under anaerobic conditions this reduced coenzyme is converted back to the oxidized form in the final stage (13) of fermentation or anaerobic respiration. Under aerobic conditions, however, this final stage is suppressed. Hence altogether in aerobic respiration there will be five molecules of reduced coenzyme oxidized by oxygen through the action of oxidases for every molecule of pyruvic acid formed and destroyed. With the half-molecule of oxygen used in the conversion of succinic acid to fumaric acid this means that six half-molecules of oxygen or 3O_2 will be absorbed for every molecule of pyruvic acid formed in the respiration process and for the three molecules of carbon dioxide produced. As a molecule of water is produced for each of these molecules of coenzyme oxidized, an examination of the equations given on the preceding pages will show that altogether three molecules of water are produced for each molecule of pyruvic acid lost. Since each molecule of glucose gives rise to two molecules of pyruvic acid, the net change over the whole respiration process is thus



It will be observed that the oxidation, and the energy release accompanying it, does not occur in a single reaction, but, like the carbon dioxide evolution, in a number of steps. The oxidase catalysing the final step in the transfer of

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

hydrogen from metabolites to oxygen is called terminal oxidase.

The tricarboxylic acid cycle was first hypothesized in respect of animal tissues and it was natural that evidence should have been sought of a similar system in the respiration of plant tissues. That aerobic respiration in plants might involve such a cycle of changes was suggested by Bonner and Wildman in 1945. Certainly the presence of a number of the supposed intermediates of the Krebs cycle and of the enzyme systems involved have been demonstrated in plants. The occurrence of pyruvic acid has already been mentioned. Apart from the fruits of many species in which citric acid is abundant, this acid has been recognized in other plant organs, as for instance potato tubers by Guthrie and cotton by McCall and Guthrie and by Ergle and Eaton. Isocitric acid, as well as occurring in some fruits including the blackberry, has been isolated by Pucher, Abrahams, and Vickery from leaves of *Bryophyllum*. Both succinic acid and malic acid have been shown to be widely distributed throughout the plant kingdom. Oxaloacetic acid and α -ketoglutaric acid are regarded as of great importance in nitrogen metabolism, and in relation to this have been recorded as present in pea plants (*Pisum*) by Virtanen and Laine and by Damodaran and Nair, but so far their wide-spread occurrence in plants has not been demonstrated.

Among the enzyme systems involved in the Krebs cycle aconitase, isocitric dehydrogenase, oxalosuccinic decarboxylase, succinic dehydrogenase, fumarase, and malic dehydrogenase have all been recognized in plants; so have the oxidases described earlier (pp. 132-7). As regards coenzymes, Seifter found that coenzyme A was widely distributed through higher plants. Coenzyme 2 was found by Whatley in the leaves of a number of flowering plants,

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

although he found coenzyme 1 present in only small amount.

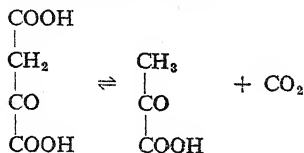
Further evidence in favour of the operation of the Krebs cycle in plant respiration is provided by the results of adding the various acids of the cycle to preparations of plant material. Thus the uptake of oxygen by oat coleoptiles was found by Bonner to be enhanced by the addition of isocitrate, α -ketoglutarate, fumarate, or succinate to the material. Barron, Link, Klein, and Michel found that potato-tuber tissue would effect the oxidation of citrate, pyruvate, α -ketoglutarate, and succinate. Among lower plants, Eny examined the absorption of oxygen and evolution of carbon dioxide by the alga *Chlorella* and decided that the effects of the addition of the various acids of the Krebs cycle to the surrounding medium were in harmony with the operation of the Krebs cycle. Many similar experiments in which the plant material used consisted of preparations of very small particles ('mitochondria') obtained from the plants used have amply confirmed the capacity of plant material to oxidize the Krebs cycle acids. Reference to this work is made later (see pp. 173-6).

There are thus good grounds for concluding that the oxidation of pyruvic acid in plant respiration may follow a similar course to that hypothesized in the Krebs cycle. It should be realized, however, that the evidence in favour of such a view is rather indirect. Indeed, James's view that there might be more than one starting-point for the oxidation phase of respiration has already been mentioned, and it must be decided that this is at least a possibility.

The recent investigations of Vennesland and her co-workers on the action of a carboxylase effecting the decarboxylation of oxaloacetic acid may prove of interest in relation to the oxidation stages in plant respiration. They found that oxaloacetic carboxylase is probably widely dis-

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

tributed in plants. The action of this enzyme is to produce pyruvic acid from oxaloacetic acid:



The enzyme appears always to be associated with malic dehydrogenase which effects the oxidation of malic acid to oxaloacetic acid (cf. p. 143). The action of the two enzymes working together could be to produce malic acid from pyruvic acid, or vice versa. There is thus the possibility of the interconversion in plant tissues of three of the reactants in the Krebs cycle, but whether these actions are actually concerned in plant respiration cannot be judged at present.

It can, however, be reasonably supposed that the final transfer of hydrogen to oxygen is effected by oxidase action. In recent years a number of investigators have attempted to discover which of the oxidases are concerned in aerobic respiration in plants, but the results obtained have led to conflicting conclusions. Catechol oxidase, cytochrome oxidase, and ascorbic acid oxidase have all been held as controlling respiration.

Evidence of the participation of the various plant oxidases in respiration has mainly been sought in three ways: (1) by determining the presence or absence of the particular oxidases, (2) by examining the effects of known inhibitors of the oxidases on respiration, and (3) by observing the effect of adding a substrate of the oxidase to tissue. It seems to us that these kinds of evidence are not above suspicion. The presence of an oxidase is not sufficient evidence of its action as a terminal oxidase in respiration, while although an enzyme has not been found

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

in a tissue it may be there all the same. Also, in such a complex mechanism as the living cell it is possible that such poisons as cyanides may affect other cell constituents besides oxidases and there may result effects on cell processes, including respiration, not directly due to the influence of the poison on the enzyme action it is known to inhibit *in vitro*. Similarly an oxidase substrate, such as catechol, if present in excess, might act as a protoplasmic poison.

From the results of work with potato-tuber tissue Boswell and Whiting concluded that catechol oxidase was concerned with the respiration of potatoes. They found that addition of a small quantity of a 0.04M solution of catechol to thin slices of potato tuber resulted in a considerable increase in respiration intensity, the rate of both oxygen uptake and carbon dioxide evolution rising, the increase being followed by a fall to a value much below the initial rate. The fall was attributed to inhibition of catechol oxidase action by an oxidation product of catechol. With tissue slices two cells thick, in which presumably the catechol would diffuse into all the cells, the final respiration rate was found to be one-third of the initial rate before the addition of catechol. This result led Boswell and Whiting to conclude that two-thirds of the total normal respiration of potato tuber tissue was controlled by catechol oxidase and the remaining third by some other system. Baker and Nelson, however, considered that the fall in respiration rate observed by Boswell and Whiting was not due to inhibition of catechol oxidase by a catechol product, since they observed an even greater fall on addition of 4-tertiary butyl alcohol, which scarcely inhibits the action of catechol oxidase at all. These investigators reported, however, that a reduction in respiration rate, as measured by oxygen uptake, of 85 per cent., occurred when slices of potato were

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

subjected to the action of inhibitors of catechol oxidase, such as potassium cyanide and 4-nitrocatechol, and 85 per cent. they regarded as near enough to 100 per cent. to make it seem probable that the whole of the respiration of potato-tuber tissue was controlled by catechol oxidase. Later Boswell found that the actual amount of residual respiration after treatment of the tissue with catechol depended on the condition of the tissue, and he thought the difference between the found values of 67 per cent. and 85 per cent. reduction in respiratory activity was related to tissue differences.

Schade and his collaborators considered that catechol was a protoplasmic poison which completely disrupted the normal metabolism of the cell and they therefore disputed the conclusion that the fall in respiration of potato slices as a result of adding catechol was due to an inhibition of catechol oxidase by an oxidation product of catechol. Their own experiments led them to conclude that catechol oxidase was not a terminal oxidase in potato respiration but that two other oxidases were involved. Since the respiration of potato slices was partially inhibited by carbon monoxide and the inhibition removed by light it was concluded that an enzyme concerned was cytochrome oxidase. Support for this was obtained by the use of homogenates of the potato tissue. Addition of cytochrome *c* to these brought about an increased oxidation of *p*-phenylenediamine (cf. p. 135) and of ascorbate. The increment of oxidation was inhibited by carbon monoxide, the inhibition being removed by light. It was not reduced in atmospheres containing a low partial pressure of oxygen.

Since, however, the respiration of potato-tissue slices is partially inhibited by low oxygen concentration, Levy and Schade concluded that a second oxidase also functioned in potato respiration. They found that homogenates

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

without added cytochrome *c* oxidized *p*-phenylenediamine and ascorbate, the oxidation requiring a relatively high partial pressure of oxygen.

Boswell, while accepting the evidence for the presence of cytochrome oxidase in the potato, vigorously combated the conclusion of Schade and his co-workers that catechol oxidase is not a terminal oxidase in potato respiration, and from a consideration of their results Boswell concluded that their second enzyme is indeed catechol oxidase.

Miss Hackney considered that in apples also catechol oxidase was concerned with respiration. Various phenolic substances such as catechol, *p*-cresol, and protocatechuic acid when added to the medium surrounding thin slices of apple brought about an increase in the rate of oxygen uptake and sometimes in the rate of carbon dioxide evolution. Resorcinol and potassium cyanide, inhibitors of catechol oxidase, both inhibited the respiration of apple slices. It should be noted, however, that cyanide also inactivates cytochrome oxidase.

In animal tissues the favoured view is that cytochrome oxidase is the terminal oxidase in respiration. This enzyme is widely distributed in plants and it would appear that in many it functions as a terminal oxidase. Evidence that it so functions in the roots and leaves of the carrot was produced by Marsh and Goddard. They found that the respiration of carrot-root slices was reduced by treatment of these with potassium cyanide, a maximum fall to about 20 per cent. of the original rate being produced by cyanide in a concentration of $3 \times 10^{-4}\text{M}$; further increase in cyanide concentration brought no further decrease in respiration rate. A similar inhibition was produced by sodium azide and by carbon monoxide, the inhibition of the last being reversible by light. This last observation suggests that cytochrome oxidase and not catechol oxidase

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

(cf. p. 134) is responsible for 80 per cent. of the respiration of carrot root.

In work on similar lines with excised wheat embryos Brown and Goddard concluded that a large proportion of the respiration of the wheat embryo depended on the action of cytochrome oxidase. A similar conclusion has been drawn with regard to wheat and rice seedlings by Taylor, barley seedlings by Merry and Goddard and by Machlis, oat coleoptiles by Bonner, and these and stems of the garden pea by Hackett and Scheiderman. Other plant organs in which it has been found that the cytochrome activity is sufficient to account for the whole of the oxygen absorption are tobacco roots and onion-root tips.

Reference has already been made to the conclusion of Schade and his co-workers that cytochrome oxidase is a terminal oxidase in potato-tuber tissue. Stenlid concluded, from the effect on the respiration of carrot leaves in presence of sodium azide, 2,4-dinitrophenol, and *o*-phenanthroline, that an enzyme containing a heavy metal is a terminal oxidase in these leaves, but apart from rather querying the function of catechol oxidase in this way, refrained from making a more precise suggestion regarding the identity of the oxidase.

It has also been suggested that ascorbic acid oxidase may play a part in respiration. James and his co-workers found that cyanide inhibited respiration in barley shoots, and that the addition of ascorbic acid to the juice of barley seedlings led to a considerable increase in the absorption of oxygen and that this was completely inhibited by cyanide. The sap contained neither catechol nor cytochrome, the oxidation did not appear to be due to peroxidase, and James concluded that the enzyme responsible was ascorbic acid oxidase. The ascorbic acid oxidase effects, of course, the transfer of hydrogen from reduced

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

ascorbic acid to oxygen, so that the oxidized form is produced. When this enzyme functions as a terminal oxidase hydrogen is presumably accepted from reduced coenzyme 1 by a reductase, from which it is passed on to ascorbic acid, and then to oxygen through the mediation of the oxidase. The ascorbic acid oxidase would thus be playing the same role as cytochrome oxidase in bringing about the oxidation of reduced coenzyme in the Krebs cycle (pp. 153-4).

Miss Hackney thought that ascorbic acid oxidase, as well as catechol oxidase, might be a terminal oxidase in the respiration of apple slices. She found that both oxygen absorbed and carbon dioxide given out were increased by addition of ascorbic acid in low concentrations, the oxygen absorbed being much more than could be accounted for by the ascorbic acid added, thus suggesting that the ascorbic acid formed part of an oxidase system concerned in respiration. As the same effect was obtained by adding the phenolic compound protocatechuic acid, a substrate of catechol oxidase, and as the effects were additive, she concluded that both catechol oxidase and ascorbic acid functioned as terminal oxidases in the respiration of the apple.

Boswell's results with swedes, in which catechol oxidase is absent, indicate that in these also ascorbic acid oxidase may be one of the terminal oxidases in respiration.

While it is possible that more than one terminal oxidase may be functioning in the same tissue at the same time, the work of James indicates that in the same organ the functioning of one oxidase may be replaced by that of another during development. In young barley embryos he found that cytochrome oxidase was the chief terminal oxidase for cyanide, azide and carbon monoxide brought about inhibition of respiration to the extent of about 80 per cent., the inhibition produced by carbon monoxide being reversible in light. After developing for 6 or 7 days, however,

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

ascorbic acid oxidase appeared to have replaced cytochrome oxidase, the respiration being greatly reduced by diethyldithiocarbamate, an inhibitor of this enzyme. This change in the terminal oxidase was apparently not due to the disappearance of cytochrome for James and Lundegårdh, by spectrometric examination, found no appreciable reduction in the amount of cytochrome in the roots during development from the third to the tenth day from the beginning of germination.

So far the enzymes considered to act as terminal oxidases, catechol oxidase, cytochrome oxidase, and ascorbic acid oxidase are all metallo-enzymes containing either copper or iron and their action is inhibited by cyanide. James and Beevers found, however, that the very rapid respiration of the spadix of *Arum* species is not significantly inhibited by 0.001M cyanide, neither is it affected by carbon monoxide which inhibits the action of catechol oxidase and cytochrome oxidase, nor by diethyldithiocarbamate which inhibits the action of catechol oxidase and ascorbic acid oxidase. Further, none of these enzymes could be found in the spadix. James and Elliott found an autoxidizable flavo-protein present in material obtained from the *Arum* spadix, but it was not established that its activity was sufficient to account for the high rate of respiration of the spadix.

The behaviour of the *Arum* spadix may be a characteristic of the Araceae as high respiratory activity resistant to the action of cyanide and carbon monoxide has been observed by Hackett in the spadix of the skunk cabbage (*Symplocarpus foetidus*) and by Yocum and Hackett in the spadix of *Philodendron grandifolium* and in that of *Peltandra virginica*. Spectroscopic examination has, however, shown that in these species, also in *Arum maculatum* examined by Bendall and Hill, various cytochromes are present in the cells of the spadix. The last-named workers found

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

in material from the spadix of *Arum maculatum* a large amount of the cytochrome of the *b* group which they called cytochrome *b₇*, which is insensitive to cyanide and which might be concerned in the respiratory oxidation of the spadix. Yocum and Hackett also regarded it as a possibility that a cytochrome of the *b* group might be responsible for oxidation in *Philodendron grandifolium* and *Peltandrum virginica*, and this might well also be cytochrome *b₇*. In view of all the known facts, James and Elliott concluded that there were three possible paths by which respiratory oxidation might be effected in the *Arum* spadix, through cytochrome *b₇*, through the flavoprotein directly, or through the flavoprotein and the cytochrome *c*-cytochrome oxidase system.

There is thus a considerable body of evidence which suggests that aerobic respiration follows the same course as fermentation as far as the production of pyruvic acid, and that the oxidation of this is brought about by a series of reactions similar to those of the Krebs cycle first hypothesized for animal tissues. The widespread occurrence of carboxylase in plants does, however, suggest that acetaldehyde may also be a starting-point for oxidation stages in respiration, while other intermediates in fermentation are not ruled out as possible starting-points for this. As regards the oxidase concerned in the final transfer of hydrogen to oxygen there is evidence that this is frequently cytochrome oxidase but that other oxidizing systems may also function as such.

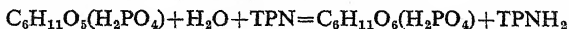
THE DIRECT OXIDATION PATHWAY

While, then, there is a considerable body of evidence in favour of the view that the course of destruction of carbohydrate to carbon dioxide and water is by way of the

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

Embden-Meyerhof-Parnas pathway of glycolysis as far as pyruvic acid and then by way of the Krebs cycle, there is now, as mentioned earlier, evidence that the aerobic degradation of carbohydrate to carbon dioxide and water may be effected through a series of reactions not involving the glycolytic pathway and the Krebs cycle. That this might be so in animal tissues has been recognized for more than twenty years, but that it might also be effective in plant tissues has been suggested only comparatively recently. In this mechanism there is also a cycle of changes in the course of which, for every six molecules of hexose sugar involved, one molecule is oxidized to carbon dioxide and water with the final re-formation of five molecules of hexose. Beginning with glucose, the reactions involved in this cycle are as follows:

1. The first stage, as in the Embden-Meyerhof-Parnas pathway, is the phosphorylation of glucose to glucose-6-phosphate by means of adenosine triphosphate and the enzyme hexokinase (see p. 119).
2. By the action of the enzyme glucose-6-phosphate dehydrogenase in presence of coenzyme 2 the glucose-6-phosphate is oxidized to 6-phosphogluconate:

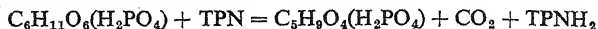


The presence of the enzyme glucose-6-phosphate dehydrogenase has been demonstrated by several workers in a number of plants including wheat, spinach, peas, and fruits of cucumber, and it has also been shown that it operates in presence of coenzyme 2.

3. From the 6-phosphogluconate, by the action of the enzyme 6-phosphogluconate dehydrogenase, also in the presence of coenzyme 2, there is then produced the phosphorylated keto-pentose sugar ribulose-5-phosphate with

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

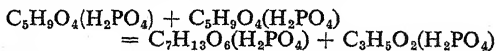
evolution of a molecule of carbon dioxide for every sugar molecule involved:



The presence of the enzyme 6-phosphogluconate dehydrogenase was demonstrated in 1953 in a number of plants by Axelrod and Bandurski and by Barnett, Stafford, Conn, and Vennesland.

4. The next stage in the cycle consists in the transformation of ribulose-5-phosphate to its isomer the aldo-pentose sugar ribose-5-phosphate. This change is effected through the action of the enzyme phosphoribose isomerase which brings about the interconversion of these two pentose phosphates. The presence of this enzyme was demonstrated by Horecker, Smyrniotis, and Klenow in 1953 and pure preparations of it were obtained by Axelrod and Jang in the following year.

5. A reaction now takes place between two molecules of phosphorylated pentose sugar to produce a molecule of a phosphorylated heptose sugar, sedoheptulose-7-phosphate and a molecule of a triosephosphate, phosphoglyceric aldehyde, the enzyme effecting this being transketolase:

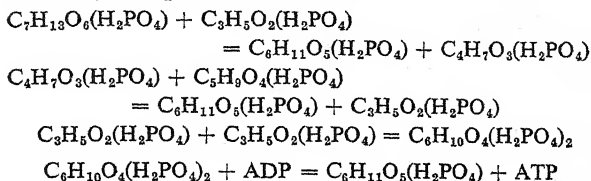


This enzyme was also shown to be present in spinach leaves by Horecker, Smyrniotis, and Klenow.

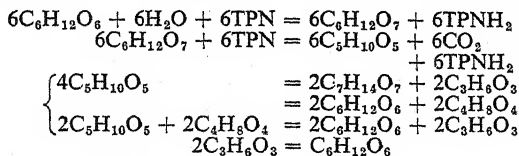
6. In the next stage of the cycle part of the sedoheptulose molecule involving three carbon atoms becomes linked with the phosphoglyceric aldehyde to re-form hexose-6-phosphate, the enzyme involved in this reaction being transaldolase. The remaining four-carbon atom portion of the sedoheptulose molecule, the portion linked to the phosphate grouping, then combines with a two-carbon atom

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

portion of a molecule of pentose to form another molecule of hexose-6-phosphate, the enzyme concerned being again transketolase. There is thus left a three-carbon atom portion of the pentose phosphate molecule. Two of these combine to form a molecule of hexose-1,6-diphosphate from which a molecule of hexose-6-phosphate is formed and a phosphate group transferred to ADP. These transformations may be represented as follows:



Omitting the phosphate groupings, the direct oxidation cycle may be summarized by the following equations:



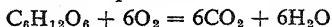
It will be observed that in the first two reactions twelve molecules of coenzyme 2 (TPN) are reduced. As the reduced coenzyme does not accumulate we can conclude that it is oxidized by means of oxygen through the mediation of a terminal oxidase with the re-formation of the oxidized form of the coenzyme:



Thus for each complete cycle involving six molecules of hexose five reappear at the end of the cycle, while there is a net production of six molecules of water and a release of six molecules of carbon dioxide with an absorption of six

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

molecules of oxygen. The overall change is thus represented by the familiar equation:



The evidence for the existence of the direct oxidation pathway is of the same kind as that adduced for the operation of the EMP-Krebs cycle pathway, namely, the demonstration in plants of the supposed intermediates and the various enzymes involved and that plant material will effect the oxidation of at least some of these intermediates.

The presence of heptose sugars in plants has been known for well over forty years and that of pentose sugars for very much longer. The heptose sugar sedoheptulose, first obtained from the leaves of *Sedum spectabile* in 1917, is now known to be widely distributed in plants. Of the various enzymes involved, work by Anderson, Stafford, Conn, and Vennesland in 1952 indicated the presence of glucose-6-phosphate dehydrogenase in fifteen different plants. Axelrod, Bandurski, Greiner, and Jang in the following year not only demonstrated the presence of this enzyme in leaves of spinach beet but also the presence of phosphogluconate dehydrogenase. In the same year Barnett, Stafford, Conn, and Vennesland found this enzyme in wheat embryos, parsley and spinach leaves, parsnip and turnip roots, and cantaloupe and cucumber fruits. Phosphoribose isomerase was found in spinach leaves by Horecker, Smyrniotis, and Klenow in 1953 and in leaves of lucerne by Axelrod and Jang in 1954, while the former workers demonstrated the presence of transketolase in spinach leaves. The enzyme transaldolase was prepared from yeast by Horecker and Smyrniotis in 1955. Gibbs obtained from the leaves of the garden pea a cell-free extract which would effect the oxidation of glucose-6-phosphate, 6-phosphogluconate, and ribose-5-phosphate.

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

THE RELATIVE PARTS PLAYED BY THE EMP-KREBS CYCLE AND DIRECT OXIDATION PATHWAYS

To assess the proportions of substrate respired by way of the two pathways, Bloom, Stetten, and Stetten, devised a method in which glucose containing radioactive carbon (C^{14}) was supplied to the respiring material. Parallel experiments were carried out in one of which the labelled carbon atom was in the 1 position, while in the other it was in the 6 position (cf. p. 111). Now if the EMP-Krebs cycle pathway is followed, the carbon dioxide first produced should be derived equally from carbon atoms in the 1 and 6 positions, while by the direct oxidation process the whole of this carbon dioxide should be derived from the carbon atom in the 1 position. If the radioactivity of the carbon dioxide in the parallel experiments is measured, the relative contributions of the carbon atoms 1 and 6 of the glucose molecule to the carbon dioxide produced can then be determined. It should be noted that the rate of respiration is independent of the labelling, but the amount of radioactivity of the carbon dioxide depends on the labelling. The ratio of the amount of radioactivity possessed by the carbon dioxide evolved when the glucose contains labelled carbon in the 1 position to that when the labelling is in the 6 position is denoted by C_1/C_6 . If the ratio is unity it suggests that all the carbon dioxide is produced by way of the EMP and Krebs cycle pathway; if the ratio is higher than unity it indicates that some of the carbon dioxide is produced by the direct oxidation process which plays a greater part the higher the ratio. Using this method, Beevers and Gibbs found with yeast grown in an aerated medium a ratio of C_1/C_6 of 2.0; when a non-aerated medium was used the ratio was as high as 5.2. These results indicate that a considerable proportion of the respired carbon

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

dioxide was produced through the operation of the direct oxidation pathway. Values of the ratio greater than unity were also obtained with material from several plants, namely, leaves of garden pea, sunflower, parsley, *Bryophyllum*, and maize, stems of the first three of these and petioles and roots of carrot. With maize roots, however, the C_1/C_6 ratio was approximately unity, indicating that the direct oxidation process did not operate in these organs. Using the same principle with fruits of tomato, cucumber, lime, and orange, Barbour, Buhler, and Wang concluded that there was significant degradation of sugar by way of the direct oxidation pathway, values of the C_1/C_6 ratio found for the four fruits being respectively 2.3, 3.9, 2.3, and 1.9. These workers estimated that in tomato fruits 84 per cent. of the sugar was degraded along the EMP-Krebs cycle pathway and 16 per cent. along the direct oxidation pathway.

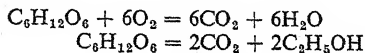
An interesting finding with regard to the course of sugar breakdown in plants subjected to fungal infection has been recorded by Daly, Sayre, and Pazur. They found that as a result of infection of the hypocotyls of plants of safflower (*Carthamus tinctorius*) with the rust *Puccinia carthami* there is increased respiratory activity, and by the use of labelled glucose and determination of the C_1/C_6 ratio with healthy and diseased plants they concluded that whereas in healthy plants respiration takes place by means of the EMP-Krebs cycle pathway, the increase in respiration resulting from fungal infection is by the direct oxidation pathway.

According to Gibbs and Beevers the proportion of respiration which takes place by means of the direct oxidation mechanism increases with age.

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

THE PASTEUR EFFECT AND OXIDATIVE ANABOLISM

Attention has already been drawn to what is now generally known as the Pasteur effect, namely, the effect of oxygen in reducing the apparent rate of glycolysis. The Pasteur effect is generally assumed to operate when the ratio of carbon dioxide evolved under anaerobic conditions is more than one-third of that evolved under aerobic conditions. The reason for this is immediately apparent from an inspection of the two equations:



The assumption is only justified where the products of anaerobic respiration are wholly carbon dioxide and alcohol. Where, as in potato tubers, little or no alcohol may be produced or the actual products are unknown, a Pasteur effect could still be inferred if the ratio of anaerobic respiration to aerobic respiration exceeded unity. By actual determinations of the loss of carbohydrate from apples and oranges in air and in nitrogen Fidler showed that the rate of carbohydrate loss in these was indeed less in air than in nitrogen, while Neal and Girton found the loss of carbohydrate from maize roots during a four-hour period in nitrogen was about 50 per cent. greater than from similar roots kept in air for the same period.

In considering the Pasteur effect it will be as well to recall the experimental findings with regard to the effect of oxygen concentration on the rate of carbon dioxide evolution. It has been mentioned earlier that as oxygen concentration increases from zero anaerobic respiration (fermentation) decreases until at the extinction point it is completely suppressed. Aerobic respiration on the other hand increases continuously with increase in oxygen concentration and

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

this increase in respiratory activity may continue with increasing oxygen concentration right up to 100 per cent. oxygen, although the increase is usually not very great. Where a Pasteur effect is observed it can be concluded that oxygen has two opposed effects, one inducing a reduction in the apparent rate of glycolysis, the other an increase in this with increasing oxygen concentration. This indicates that two separate reactions are here concerned. Also, when respiration intensity increases with increase in oxygen concentration the value of the ratio of carbon dioxide output under anaerobic conditions to that under aerobic conditions will decrease as the oxygen concentration increases. In looking for a Pasteur effect it would therefore be desirable to compare carbon dioxide output in absence of oxygen with the output in the lowest concentration of oxygen in which fermentation is entirely suppressed, that is, at the extinction point. As a rule, however, respiration rates in air are only a little higher than at the extinction point, and the ratio of carbon dioxide output in nitrogen or hydrogen to that in air provides a reasonably valid criterion for deciding on the existence or not of a Pasteur effect.

Another complication which arises in estimating the Pasteur effect is that the output of carbon dioxide under anaerobic conditions does not generally remain constant but decreases with time. This behaviour is attributed to secondary effects as, for example, those resulting from the accumulation within the cell of products, often toxic. Hence to obtain a value for the anaerobic output of carbon dioxide unaffected by these secondary actions it is necessary to obtain an estimate of this output at the moment when the tissue concerned is transferred from aerobic to anaerobic conditions, an estimate which can, as a rule, only be obtained by extrapolation (cf. pp. 86-7). However, bearing in mind all these considerations, it can be con-

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

cluded that the Pasteur effect has been observed in a wide range of plant material including roots of beet, mangold and carrot, artichoke tubers and a number of fruits, including tomatoes, mangoes, guavas and apples, but in a number of seedlings, including those of *Lathyrus odoratus* and buckwheat, a Pasteur effect would appear to be absent, though in others a ratio of initial respiration in nitrogen to respiration in air above $1/3$ would indicate the presence of a Pasteur effect.

There appear to be at least four possible explanations of the rate of carbon dioxide output under anaerobic conditions exceeding $1/3$ of the output in air.

(1) In the first place the effect of oxygen might be actually to reduce the rate at which the carbohydrate substrate is consumed. This might be effected if oxygen inhibited one or more of the various reactions concerned in the anaerobic breakdown of sugar either directly or by affecting the concentration of any of the reactants. Various suggestions have been made of how this might be brought about but without unequivocal evidence in their support.

(2) In the second place the rate of glycolysis itself might not be reduced, but under anaerobic conditions additional carbon dioxide might be produced from some other substrate such as protein or organic acids. We have already noticed (see p. 78) that this has been observed in some tissues, but there is no evidence that the excess of carbon dioxide from such sources could account for the comparatively high ratios of anaerobically produced to aerobically produced carbon dioxide which have been observed, nor would it be possible to account for the lower rate of consumption of carbohydrate under aerobic conditions as compared with that under anaerobic conditions which has been observed in some tissues.

(3) A third possibility is that under aerobic conditions

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

some of the phosphorylated substrate, instead of being degraded along the EMP glycolytic pathway and the Krebs cycle, is broken down through the direct oxidation mechanism. This might happen, for example, if there were competition for glucose-6-phosphate between phosphohexose isomerase of the EMP pathway and glucose-6-phosphate dehydrogenase of the direct oxidation pathway. Since for every six molecules of glucose-6-phosphate which enter into the direct oxidation cycle only six molecules of carbon dioxide are released while five molecules of hexose are re-formed, it follows that if only a relatively small part of the substrate were degraded by the direct oxidation pathway and the rest by way of the glycolytic and Krebs cycle route, the ratio of carbon dioxide produced under anaerobic conditions to that produced under aerobic conditions would be greater than $1/3$, while the net loss of carbohydrate under aerobic conditions would be less than that in nitrogen or hydrogen. It would help to test the credibility of this view if determinations were made both of the relative proportions of substrate degraded along the two pathways and of the extent of the Pasteur effect in a range of plant materials. Evidence of this kind is for the most part wanting and what little that can be produced is indeterminate. Thus in young maize roots the direct oxidation pathway appears not to operate whereas Neal and Girton found a very definite Pasteur effect in these organs, the ratio of carbon dioxide production in nitrogen to that in air being 0.64. However, in very young maize seedlings Leach found this ratio to be 0.25, indicating a complete absence of the Pasteur effect. This divergence in results may be related to varietal difference in the material used or more probably to difference in age of the tissues. It may be noted that as organs age the part played by the direct oxidation mechanism appears to increase and on the whole the Pasteur effect

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

seems to be more evident in mature organs than in younger ones.

(4) The fourth possibility is that there are other products of oxidation containing carbon besides carbon dioxide, and although what these substances are is in doubt, inasmuch as they might be sugars this view is similar to the last. It does not, however, assume a reduction in the rate of glycolysis such as would occur if part of the hexose-6-phosphate were not subjected to glycolysis but directly oxidized. This interpretation of the Pasteur effect was rendered familiar to botanists by F. F. Blackman's analysis of data of the respiration of apples under aerobic and anaerobic conditions published in 1928 more than a quarter of a century before the existence of the direct oxidation pathway in plants was indicated. Blackman had then made the assumption, which at the time appeared to be generally accepted, that the action of the zymase complex of enzymes was independent of oxygen. Where, then, as in apples, the rate of carbon dioxide output on switching over from an atmosphere of air to one of nitrogen did not fall to as low as one-third of the previous rate, it followed that in air only part of the intermediate substances formed as a result of glycolysis were oxidized completely to carbon dioxide and water, while the rest had some other fate. No new substance appeared to accumulate in the tissues, and the conclusion was therefore drawn that in presence of oxygen part of the products of glycolysis were worked back into the system, whether to the hexose or to some intermediate stage could not be said. To this process the name 'oxidative anabolism' was given. Proof of such a synthesis of carbohydrate associated with oxidation had previously been given by Meyerhof for muscle.

In considering Blackman's conclusions and the reasons which led to them, let us first note the effect produced on

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

respiration of apples by changing the oxygen content of the environment. When air is replaced by pure oxygen the respiration rate increases, the rate in oxygen being 1.4 times the rate in air, while when normal air is replaced by air containing only 5 per cent. oxygen the respiration rate

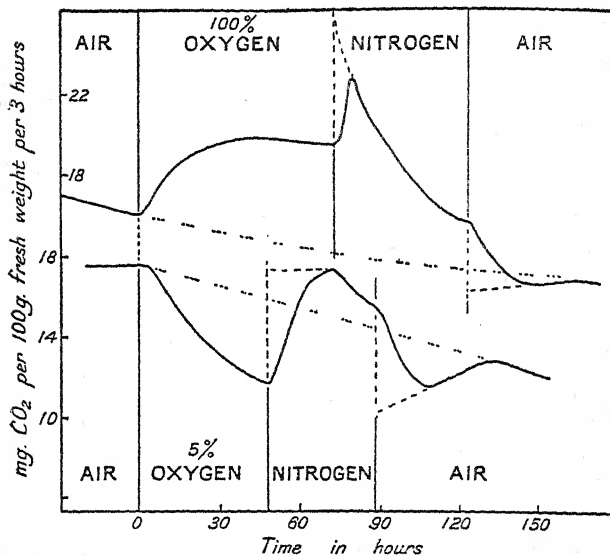


Fig. 10. Curves showing the effect on carbon dioxide output of Bramley's Seedling apples, produced by atmospheres containing various concentrations of oxygen

(After Blackman)

falls to 0.7 that in normal air, or less. The transition to the new rate is, however, slow in both cases, lasting at least 45 hours (cf. Fig. 10). Now it seems most unlikely that it would take so long a time for a pure oxidation rate to adjust itself after an increase in oxygen concentration, and it is therefore

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

concluded that oxygen concentration must influence the rate of some earlier stage in the process. As it is assumed that the action of the zymase complex of enzymes is independent of oxygen it is presumed that oxygen concentration must affect a pre-glycolytic stage, with the result that increase in oxygen concentration brings about an increase in the concentration of the effective substrate for glycolysis. As this increase in the concentration of the substrate is maintained it means that increase in oxygen concentration results in an increase in the rate of production of the substrate from pyranose sugars or reserve carbohydrates.

That oxygen concentration influences the rate of production of the effective substrate for glycolysis from normal hexoses and reserve carbohydrates is, moreover, suggested by the slow rate of adjustment which is characteristic of altered carbohydrate balance relations. The course of respiration in the transition 'is exactly that of an approach to a reversible equilibrium . . . We picture the opposed processes to be increased production of C from A — B by oxygen activation working against increased consumption of C by glycolysis, which rises with each rise of concentration until the two become adjusted to equality again.' [In Blackman's scheme A represents reserve carbohydrate, B normal (pyranose) hexose, and C effective substrate (called heterohexose by Blackman).]

It will be further observed that these considerations suggest that the effective substrate in glycolysis is present in low concentrations since changes in oxygen concentration bring about marked changes in its production and consumption. For this reason a pre-glycolytic reaction consisting merely of hydrolysis of reserve carbohydrates to normal hexoses is insufficient to meet the case since the normal hexoses are present in relatively high concentration and would therefore undergo slight alterations in concentration.

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

Such are the considerations which led Blackman to postulate what he called heterohexoses as the direct substrate for glycolysis, and not normal hexoses. We should now have to regard the heterohexoses as phosphorylated hexose.

Blackman's conclusions regarding the course of aerobic respiration subsequent to glycolysis are largely based on Parija's observations, to which reference has been made earlier, on respiration of apples in air and in nitrogen. It will be recalled that when air is replaced by nitrogen the initial rate of respiration in nitrogen at the moment of transference is 1.33 or 1.5 times the rate in air, but this rate slowly falls to a level which may be that of respiration in air, or somewhat higher. This slow fall is that slow transition which, as we have just seen, is characteristic of a change in oxygen concentration, and indicates the pre-glycolytic decrease in production of heterohexoses resulting from the fall in oxygen concentration from 20 per cent. to nothing. At the beginning, therefore, of the nitrogen period, the concentration of glycolytic substrate, which determines the rate of glycolysis, is that obtaining in air. In other words, the initial value of respiration in nitrogen (actually obtained by extrapolation to allow for the diffusion lag as explained in Chapter III) gives a value for glycolysis in air.

Now if it is assumed that under anaerobic conditions only one-third of the carbon acted upon in the glycolytic stage finally appears as carbon dioxide while the other two-thirds appear as ethyl alcohol, then if the carbon atom is taken as a unit, we can say that respiration in nitrogen, as measured by carbon dioxide evolved, is only one-third of glycolysis, or using Blackman's notation, $G1 = 3NR$, where $G1$ signifies glycolysis and NR nitrogen respiration.

Now we have seen that when air is replaced by nitrogen, before the rate of glycolysis has altered, the respiration

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

increases to 1.5 or 1.33 times that in air. Consequently, using the symbol OR for respiration in air, we have

$$NR = 1.5 \text{ OR (or } 1.33 \text{ OR)}$$

and

$$GI = 4.5 \text{ OR (or } 4 \text{ OR)}$$

This means that under aerobic conditions only one atom of carbon out of every 4 or 4.5 subjected to glycolysis is actually released as carbon dioxide. Consequently for every atom of carbon released as carbon dioxide 3 or 3.5 atoms of carbon are worked back into the system, or, again using Blackman's system of notation, OA (oxidative anabolism) = 3.5 OR (or 3.0 OR). It is not clear whether these different ratios (3.5 and 3.0) represent the extremes of a range, or whether the ratios remain constant within a given type. The available evidence appears to point to the latter alternative. If this is so, the lower ratio appears to be associated with late metabolic states of the apple and the higher ratio with earlier ones.

Since Blackman propounded his theory the work of Fidler, to which reference has been made earlier, has shown that part of the carbon dioxide produced in apples, under both aerobic and anaerobic conditions, arises from malic acid the rate of degradation of which is unaffected by oxygen. Consequently, if the values of NR and OR are taken to refer solely to the carbon dioxide arising from carbohydrate the ratio NR/OR would be somewhat less than that given above. Although the amount of oxidative anabolism would be less than that calculated by Blackman, his argument is not affected.

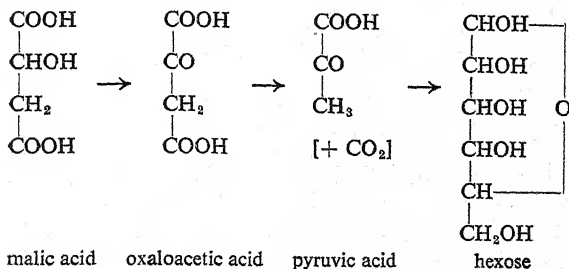
Assuming Blackman's hypothesis, the amount of oxidative anabolism relative to the amount of glycolysis varies in different tissues and probably in the same tissue at different times. With storage tissues and roots values of NR/OR between about 0.5 and 1.4 are common, indicating

that from about one-third to three-quarters of the carbon involved in glycolysis is subjected to oxidative anabolism. In some of the young seedlings examined by Leach and Dent the value of $\frac{NR}{OR}$ was found to be one-third or less (cf. Table XV, p. 90), suggesting the absence of oxidative anabolism in such material.

The question naturally arises as to what is the fate of the carbon subjected to oxidative anabolism. While there is at present no very definite answer to this question there are indications that hexose may be resynthesized. Meyerhof demonstrated the production of hexose from pyruvic acid in muscle, while work by Bennet-Clark and Bexon has suggested the possibility of a re-synthesis of hexose in plant tissues. They found that when thin slices of beetroot were placed in sap expressed from such tissue the rate of respiration increased. This appeared to be due to utilization of salts of organic acids present in the sap, for a similar increase in respiration rate resulted from the addition of malate, citrate, or succinate of similar concentration (about 0.05N) to that of the acids in the sap. The respiratory quotient rose at the same time from about unity to values between 1.5 and 2.3. If malic or citric acid were completely oxidized to carbon dioxide and water the value would be 1.33, and if succinic acid were the substrate it would be only 1.143. Thus the observed quotients are considerably higher than those which would result from complete oxidation of the acid substrates, and if normal respiration were proceeding at the same time the disparity between the observed and theoretical quotients would be even greater. The high quotients found experimentally would be accounted for if the acids were only partly oxidized to carbon dioxide and water and if part of them was synthesized to hexose. This view is supported by the observation that for every molecule

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

of acid lost only one molecule of carbon dioxide is produced, so that of the four carbon atoms in each molecule of acid lost only one appears in carbon dioxide. The suggestion was made that two molecules of malic acid, for instance, give rise to one molecule of hexose and two of carbon dioxide. The presence in plants of enzymes effecting the oxidation of malic acid to oxaloacetic acid and the decarboxylation of this to pyruvic acid has been recorded by Vennesland and co-workers. It is thus interesting that before Vennesland's work Bennet-Clark and Bexon had put forward a tentative scheme for the formation of hexose from malic acid through oxaloacetic acid and pyruvic acid:



This is not to suggest that the dicarboxylic acids are actual intermediates in respiration although they may play the part assigned to them in the Krebs cycle. Rather it suggests that in normal respiration pyruvic acid forms the starting-point of the anabolic process hypothesized by Blackman.

The results of work by James and Slater, however, militate against such a view of the synthesis of hexose from pyruvic acid, at any rate in the root tips of barley seedlings. Such material from seedlings 3 days and 7 days old was supplied with sodium pyruvate labelled with radioactive

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

carbon (C^{14}) in either the CH_3 or CO group. After incubation of the material for 4 hours at $30^\circ C$. the radioactivity of a number of substances present in the root tips was determined. In this way it was found that carbon from pyruvic acid had been incorporated in a number of amino acids, amides and organic acids, namely, alanine, glutamic acid, aspartic acid and *p*-aminobutyric acid, glutamine and asparagine, and citric, succinic, malonic and glycollic acids and, to a greater extent, malic acid. To a slighter extent radioactive carbon had passed into α -ketoglutaric, fumaric, and lactic acids but no radioactivity was observed in any sugar. Thus although it would appear that pyruvic acid could give rise to acids of the Krebs cycle and to aminated compounds it was not the precursor of sugar. In a similar experiment with thin slices of apple supplied with sodium pyruvate with labelled carbon no radioactivity could be detected in the sugar present in the tissue after 24 hours in aerated water.

It may be worthy of note that the organs in which evidence for oxidative anabolism has been produced are mainly those, such as storage organs or senescent fruits, in which active growth is not taking place. In these, if such anabolism does occur, it is reasonable enough to suppose that the product might be hexose, for energy is not required for the building of proteins or other complex substances necessary for growth. In the few seedlings examined there is little or no evidence of oxidative anabolism as the ratio NR/OR is generally not more than 0.33 except in seeds respiring fat, to which the argument based on utilization of carbohydrate does not apply. For the most part evidence relating to other actively growing organs is lacking. However, whatever the ratio NR/OR may be, it is reasonable to suppose that in these there is a linking of anabolic processes with the catabolic ones, so that at least part of

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

the energy released in the degradation of the substrate is utilized in the building up of proteins and other complex substances required for growth and in the maintenance of vital activities such as salt absorption and perhaps water absorption, and that intermediates in that degradation may be utilized in the formation of these complex compounds. In the production of proteins, for example, there is reason to believe that the amino acids, from which the proteins are built, result from the reaction of a substance possessing an $-NH_2$ group, such as ammonia or hydroxylamine, with an α -ketonic acid such as pyruvic acid or oxaloacetic acid. We have already seen that pyruvic acid may be the starting-point for the oxidative processes in respiration and that enzyme systems exist which catalyse the production of oxaloacetic acid from pyruvic acid, and it is at least possible that pyruvic acid produced in carbohydrate breakdown may form the starting-point for the formation of proteins.

THE LOCATION OF THE RESPIRATORY ENZYMES

It is only comparatively recently that information has been obtained regarding the location in the cell of various enzyme systems, including some of those concerned in respiration. This information has been obtained through the use of the technique of differential centrifugation in which homogenates of plant material are centrifuged first at a low speed and then, after removal of the sediment, at a much higher speed, the operation being sometimes repeated at a still higher speed. By this means the particles in the homogenates can be separated into the relatively coarser particles of cell wall fragments, nuclei and plastids, and the much smaller particles known as mitochondria. At a still higher speed the even smaller particles called microsomes are obtained. In this way James and Das, for example, using

material from leaves of broad bean (*Vicia faba*) and spinach beet, found centrifugation of the homogenates at a speed of 600g for 2 minutes removed whole cell and wall fragments. The resulting supernatant fluid was then centrifuged at 1,000g for 12 minutes, by which the chloroplasts were thrown down in the sediment. Centrifugation of the supernatant liquid after this operation at a speed of 16,000g for 15 minutes resulted in the deposition of the mitochondria. A complete separation of plastids and mitochondria cannot always be effected by this means as the sizes may overlap. Thus according to Stafford, in the garden pea the diameters of nuclei, plastids, and mitochondria are respectively 8–15 μ , 4–30 μ , and 0.1–6 μ . James and Das were, however, able to obtain chloroplast preparations free from mitochondria, although they did not succeed in obtaining mitochondria free from chloroplasts. By centrifuging the supernatant liquid after the deposition of the mitochondria at extremely high speeds of the order of 100,000g the still smaller microsome particles were obtained.

There is now a considerable body of evidence to show that a number of enzymes concerned in respiration are located in the mitochondria. First, since it is difficult to obtain mitochondria free from plastids, it may be noted that James and Das found purified preparations of chloroplasts could not oxidize any of the acids of the Krebs cycle, or cytochrome *c*, or pyruvate in presence of malate, and no cytochrome *c* could be detected in the chloroplasts. On the other hand, many workers have now demonstrated the capacity of mitochondrial preparations to effect such oxidations, thus indicating the presence in the mitochondria of the enzyme systems catalysing these oxidations. Thus Bhavgat and Hill, in the sediment obtained from a final centrifugation at 15,000g of material from more than a dozen plants including embryos of barley, wheat, and

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

maize, roots of dandelion and cotyledons of the garden pea, demonstrated the presence of cytochrome oxidase and succinic dehydrogenase, while Stafford showed these to be present in mitochondria from three-day-old pea seedlings, the particles being obtained by a final centrifuging of the homogenate at a speed of 16,500*g*. Millerd, Bonner, Axelrod, and Bandurski found that addition of any one of the acids of the Krebs cycle to mitochondria obtained from etiolated seedlings of the mung bean (*Phaseolus aureus*) resulted in an increase of oxygen absorption, indicating an oxidation of the added acid. Among other plant materials which have been shown by various workers to yield mitochondria which would effect these oxidations are cauliflower, the spadix of *Arum maculatum*, the fruit of the avocado, black valentine bean and germinating castor-oil seeds, developing fruits of pepper (*Capsicum annuum*), spinach, lettuce, and the fern *Pteris tremula*. Confirmatory experiments have been performed by supplying mitochondria with pyruvate containing radioactive carbon (C^{14}), isolating the acids produced and determining their radioactivity. In this way Stanley and Conn found that citric, succinic, and malic acids obtained from mitochondria supplied with labelled pyruvate from seeds and young seedlings of *Pinus lambertiana* were radioactive and so produced from the pyruvate.

There is thus considerable evidence that the enzymes concerned in the oxidations carried out in the Krebs cycle are present in the mitochondria. The enzymes so far found to be generally present in mitochondria do not include ascorbic acid oxidase, which is thought to be held in the cell surface and in some plants, for example lupin, doubt has been expressed about the presence of other oxidizing enzymes in the mitochondria. The enzymes of the EMP pathway and direct oxidation pathway for the most part do not appear to be present in cell particles and are generally

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

regarded as soluble enzymes present in the fluid body of the cytoplasm. An exception to this is hexokinase, which according to Millerd, Bonner, Axelrod, and Bandurski is held in mitochondria, although according to Saltman it may also be present elsewhere in the cell.

ENERGY TRANSFER IN RESPIRATION

When hexose sugar is burnt with the formation of carbon dioxide and water some 670 kilogram calories are released in the form of heat for each gram-molecule of sugar burnt. In the process of aerobic respiration the end products are the same as those which result from the combustion of hexose and the same amount of energy must have been released from the same amount of sugar. But as pointed out earlier, the conditions of degradation of hexose are very different in the processes of combustion and respiration, and while in the latter a proportion of the energy released is no doubt dissipated in heat, some of it is utilized in the building up of complex substances and in other vital activities.

The evolution of heat by actively respiring tissues such as germinating seeds and opening flower-buds is readily demonstrated by the use of vacuum flasks. The heat evolved by the respiring tissue is lost very slowly through the walls of the flask and a rise in temperature of the contents of the flask results. The rise of temperature during the development of the inflorescence of *Arum italicum* was recorded as long ago as 1778 by Lamarck. According to a report by Kraus more than 100 years later the temperature of the spadix of this species may rise to 27.7° C. above that of the surrounding air. This rise in temperature is, however, exceptionally high, and it has been stated that the temperature of an actively growing shoot is not as a rule more than 0.3° C. above that of the surroundings.

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

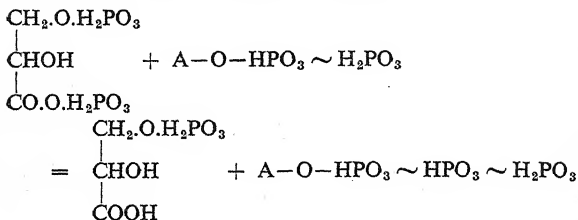
In the economic field it is well known that serious damage is frequently suffered by products such as grain and soya beans, due to their heating as a result of respiratory activity when they are stored in bulk under too moist conditions. It has been adequately proved by Ramstad and Geddes, Snow and Wright, and by Leach, that in these cases the respiratory activity which results in the heating is almost entirely due to contaminating moulds and bacteria. Ramstad and Geddes, by means of an apparatus in which soya beans of various moisture contents were stored under adiabatic conditions, obtained temperature rises of as much as 69.4°C . in an experimental period of 27 hours.

It is, of course, the fate of the energy derived from the degradation of hexose which is not dissipated as heat which is of particular interest to the student of plant respiration. While it has been recognized for a long time that the catabolic reactions were linked with others whereby energy was transferred and utilized in processes necessary for growth and maintenance, the way in which this transference of energy was effected was quite obscure. Within recent years, however, evidence has been produced indicating that organic phosphates containing energy-rich bonds, particularly the adenosine phosphates ADP and ATP (cf. p. 118) and enzymes catalysing the transfer of phosphate groupings in these compounds, play an important part in energy transfer.

In the formation of the energy-rich bonds the energy is generally provided by oxidation. In the scheme of hexose breakdown summarized on pages 119 to 127 it will be observed that in reactions 6 and 7 the phosphoglycer-aldehyde, after combining with a molecule of phosphoric acid, is oxidized to diphosphoglyceric acid. The energy released in the oxidation is transferred to the bond linking

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

the phosphate to the carboxyl group, which thus becomes an energy-rich bond. In the next reaction this phosphate is transferred to adenosine diphosphate, the energy being transferred along with the phosphate, with the formation of adenosine triphosphate, so that this phosphate group is now attached by an energy-rich bond:



The terminal phosphate grouping of ATP with the energy of the bond linking it to the ADP residue can then be transferred to some other substance. Examples of this have already been cited in dealing with the anaerobic breakdown of sugar. In this way glucose-6-phosphate is formed from glucose and fructose-1,6-diphosphate from fructose-6-phosphate.

Now in the whole course of fermentation or anaerobic respiration it will be observed that for every molecule of hexose utilized two molecules of ATP are dephosphorylated to ADP (in reactions 1 and 3) while four molecules of ADP are phosphorylated to ATP (in reactions 8 and 11, since two molecules of the 3-carbon molecules involved are obtained from each molecule of hexose). There is thus a net gain of two molecules of ATP and of two energy-rich phosphate bonds for every molecule of hexose subjected to glycolysis, and the energy of these bonds has been derived from the hexose. The phosphate is provided by the inorganic phosphate which links up with phosphoglyceraldehyde in reaction 6. In fermentation or anaerobic

THE MECHANISM OF RESPIRATION

respiration the energy of two energy-rich phosphate bonds thus become available for transfer for every molecule of hexose utilized. The energy of these two bonds is not much less than the whole of the energy released in the breakdown of a molecule of glucose to carbon dioxide and ethyl alcohol (cf. pp. 80 and 119).

The energy released in the aerobic breakdown of hexose to carbon dioxide and water is very much greater than that released in fermentation or anaerobic respiration, roughly about twenty-five times as much. Most of this will thus be released in the reactions involved in the oxidation phase of aerobic respiration, and it is a reasonable hypothesis that the oxidations occurring in this phase are coupled with phosphorylations. Although pyruvic acid itself is not so phosphorylated there is evidence that in animal tissues oxidation of the various acids of the Krebs cycle, succinic acid, fumaric acid, and malic acid, may give rise to phosphorylation of various substances. While only a little is known of such a coupling of oxidation with phosphorylation in higher plants, it would be premature to pursue the argument further in this place. It is, however, a reasonable hypothesis that the transfer of energy from the hexose forming the respiratory substrate to the more complex substances synthesized as the result of respiratory activity, is brought about through phosphorylations linked with oxidations and the transfer of the energy of energy-rich phosphate bonds. The same means of energy transference may also be involved in the provision of energy for moving salts in opposition to the concentration gradient and for other vital activities. The actual course of transfer of the energy released in the oxidation of hexose to the reactions involved in these vital activities is scarcely more than a matter of conjecture and presents problems which only further experimental research can solve.

Literature Cited in the Text

- ALBAUM, H. G., OGUR, M., and HIRSCHFELD, A. The isolation of adenosine triphosphate from plant tissues. *Arch. Biochem.*, **27**, 13-42. 1950
- ANDERSON, D. A., STAFFORD, H. A., CONN, E. E., and VENNESLAND, B. The distribution in higher plants of triphosphopyridine nucleotide-linked enzyme systems capable of reducing glutathione. *Plant Physiol.*, **27**, 675-84. 1952
- APPLEMAN, C. O., and BROWN, R. G. Relation of anaerobic to aerobic respiration in some storage organs with special reference to the Pasteur effect in higher plants. *Amer. Journ. Bot.*, **33**, 170-81. 1946
- ARNON, D. I. Glyceraldehyde phosphate dehydrogenase of green plants. *Science*, **116**, 635-7. 1952
- ARNON, D. I., ROSENBERG, L. L., and WHATLEY, F. R. A new glyceraldehyde phosphate dehydrogenase from photosynthetic tissues. *Nature*, **173**, 1132-3. 1954
- AUBERT, E. Recherches sur la respiration et l'assimilation des plantes grasses. *Rev. gén. Bot.*, **4**, 203-82, 321-31, 337-53, 421-41, 497-502, 558-68. 1892
- AUDUS, L. J. Mechanical stimulation and respiration rate in the cherry laurel. *New Phyt.*, **34**, 557-80. 1936
- Mechanical stimulation and respiration in the green leaf. II. Investigation on a number of angiospermic species. *New Phyt.*, **38**, 284-8. 1939
- Mechanical stimulation and respiration in the green leaf. III. The effect of stimulation on the rate of fermentation. *New Phyt.*, **39**, 65-74. 1940

LITERATURE CITED IN THE TEXT

Mechanical stimulation and respiration in the green leaf.
Parts IV and V. *New Phyt.*, **40**, 86-95. 1941

AXELROD, B., and BANDURSKI, R. S. Phosphoglyceric
kinase in higher plants. *Journ. Biol. Chem.*, **204**, 939-
948. 1953

AXELROD, B., BANDURSKI, R. S., GREINER, C. M., and
JANG, R. The metabolism of hexose and pentose
phosphates in higher plants. *Journ. Biol. Chem.*, **202**,
619-34. 1953

AXELROD, B., and JANG, R. Purification and properties of
phosphoriboseisomerase from alfalfa. *Journ. Biol.
Chem.*, **209**, 847-55. 1954

BAKER, D., and NELSON, J. M. Tyrosinase and plant
respiration. *Journ. Gen. Physiol.*, **26**, 269-76. 1943

BARBOUR, R. D., BUHLER, D. R., and WANG, C. H.
Identification and estimation of catabolic pathways of
glucose in fruits. *Plant Physiol.*, **33**, 396-400. 1958

BARKER, J. Note on the effect of handling on the respiration
of potatoes. *New Phyt.*, **34**, 407-8. 1935

BARKER, J., and EL SAIFI, A. F. Studies in the respiratory
and carbohydrate metabolism of plant tissues. I.
Experimental studies of the formation of carbon
dioxide, lactic acid and other products in potato tubers
under anaerobic conditions. *Proc. Roy. Soc., B*, **140**,
362-85. 1952

Studies in the respiratory and carbohydrate metabolism
of plant tissues. II. Interrelationships between the
rates of production of carbon dioxide, of lactic acid
and of alcohol in potato tubers under anaerobic con-
ditions. *Proc. Roy. Soc., B*, **140**, 385-403. 1953

Studies in the respiratory and carbohydrate metabolism
of plant tissues. III. Experimental studies in the
formation of carbon dioxide and of the changes in
lactic acid and other products in potato tubers in air

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

- following anaerobic conditions. *Proc. Roy. Soc., B*, **140**, 508-22. 1953
- Studies in the respiratory and carbohydrate metabolism of plant tissues. IV. The relation between the rate of carbon dioxide production in potato tubers in air following anaerobic conditions and the accompanying changes in lactic acid content and sugar concentration. *Proc. Roy. Soc., B*, **140**, 522-55. 1953
- BARKER, J., and MAPSON, L. W. Studies in the respiratory and carbohydrate metabolism of plant tissues. V. Experimental studies of the formation of carbon dioxide and of the changes in lactic acid, sucrose and in certain fractions of keto-acids in potato tubers. *Proc. Roy. Soc., B*, **141**, 321-37. 1953
- Studies in the respiratory and carbohydrate metabolism of plant tissues. VI. Analysis of the interrelationships between the rate of carbon dioxide production and the changes in the contents of lactic acid, sucrose and of certain fractions of keto-acids in potato tubers in air following anaerobic conditions. *Proc. Roy. Soc., B*, **141**, 338-62. 1953
- Studies in the respiratory and carbohydrate metabolism of plant tissues. VII. Experimental studies with potato tubers of an inhibition of the respiration and of a 'block' in the tricarboxylic acid cycle induced by 'oxygen poisoning'. *Proc. Roy. Soc., B*, **143**, 523-549. 1953.
- BARNELL, H. R. Analytic studies in plant respiration. VII. Aerobic respiration in barley seedlings and its relation to growth and carbohydrate supply. *Proc. Roy. Soc., B*, **123**, 312-42. 1937
- BARNETT, R. C., STAFFORD, H. A., CONN, E. E., and VENNESLAND, B. Phosphogluconic dehydrogenase in higher plants. *Plant Physiol.*, **28**, 115-22. 1953

LITERATURE CITED IN THE TEXT

- BARRON, E. S. S., LINK, G. K. K., KLEIN, R. M., and MICHEL, B. E. The metabolism of potato slices. *Arch. Biochem.*, **28**, 377-98. 1950
- BASFORD, R. E., and HUENNEKENS, F. M. Studies on thiols. II. Multiple forms of coenzyme A. *Journ. Amer. Chem. Soc.*, **77**, 3878-82. 1955
- BEEVERS, H., and GIBBS, M. Participation of the oxidative pathway in yeast respiration. *Nature*, **173**, 640-1. 1954
Position of C¹⁴ in alcohol and carbon dioxide formed from labelled glucose by corn root tips. *Plant Physiol.*, **29**, 318-21. 1954
The direct oxidation pathway in plant respiration. *Plant Physiol.*, **29**, 322-4. 1954
- BEEVERS, H., and WALKER, D. A. The oxidative activity of particulate fractions from germinating castor beans. *Biochem. Journ.*, **62**, 114-20. 1956
- BENNET-CLARK, T. A., and BEXON, D. Water relations of plant cells. III. The respiration of plasmolysed tissues. *New Phyt.*, **42**, 65-92, 1943
- BENNETT, E. A note on the presence of pyruvic acid in Ebenezer onions. *Plant Physiol.*, **20**, 461-3. 1945
- BENNETT, J. P., and BARTHOLEMEW, E. T. The respiration of potato tubers in relation to the occurrence of black-heart. *Univ. California Agric. Exp. Stat., Tech. Paper No. 14*. 1924
- BHAVGAT, K., and HILL, R. Cytochrome oxidase in higher plants. *New Phytol.*, **50**, 112-20. 1951
- BIALE, J. B., and YOUNG, R. E. Critical oxygen concentrations for the respiration of lemons. *Amer. J. Bot.*, **34**, 301-9. 1947
- BLACKMAN, F. F. The manifestations of the principles of chemical mechanics in the living cell. Presidential Address to Section K (Botany), *Rep. British Ass. Adv. Sci.*, 1908. Publ. London, 1909

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

- Analytical studies in plant respiration. III. Formulation of a catalytic system for the respiration of apples and its relation to oxygen. *Proc. Roy. Soc., B*, **103**, 491-523. 1928
- Respiration and Oxygen-Concentration. Fifth International Botanical Congress, Cambridge, 1930. *Report of Proceedings*. Publ. Cambridge, 1931
- BLACKMAN, F. F., and MATTHAEI, G. L. C. Experimental researches on vegetable assimilation and respiration. IV. A quantitative study of carbon dioxide assimilation and leaf temperature in natural illumination. *Proc. Roy. Soc., B*, **76**, 402-60. 1905
- BLACKMAN, F. F., and PARIJA, P. Analytical studies in plant respiration. I. The respiration of a population of senescent ripening apples. *Proc. Roy. Soc., B*, **103**, 412-45. 1928
- BLOOM, B., STETTEN, M. R., and STETTEN, D. Evaluation of catabolic pathways of glucose in mammalian systems. *Journ. Biol. Chem.*, **204**, 681-94. 1953
- BODNAR, J. Über die Zymase und Carboxylase der Kartoffel und Zuckerrübe. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, **73**, 193-210. 1916
- Biochemie des Phosphorsäurestoffwechsels der höheren Pflanzen. I. Mitt. Über die enzymatische Überführung der anorganischen Phosphorsäure in organische Form. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, **165**, 1-15. 1925
- BÖHM, J. Ueber die Respiration der Kartoffel. *Bot. Zeit.*, **45**, 671-5, 681-92. 1887
- BONNER, J. Biochemical mechanisms in the respiration of the *Avena coleoptile*. *Arch. Biochem.*, **17**, 311-26. 1948
- BONNER, J., and WILDMAN, S. G. Enzymatic mechanisms in the respiration of spinach leaves. *Arch. Biochem.*, **10**, 497-518. 1945

LITERATURE CITED IN THE TEXT

- BONNIER, G., and MANGIN, L. Respiration des tissus sans chlorophylle. *Ann. Sci. nat.*, Sér. 6, 18, 293-379. 1884
- BOSWELL, J. G. Oxidation systems in the potato tuber. *Ann. Bot.*, N.S., 9, 55-76. 1945
- Metabolic systems in the 'root' of *Brassica napus* L. *Ann. Bot.*, N.S., 14, 521-43. 1950
- BOSWELL, J. G., and WHITING, G. C. A study of the polyphenol oxidase system in potato tubers. *Ann. Bot.*, N.S., 2, 847-64. 1938
- Observations on the anaerobic respiration of potato tubers. *Ann. Bot.*, N.S., 4, 257-68. 1940
- BROWN, A. H. The effects of light on respiration using isotopically enriched oxygen. *Amer. Journ. Bot.*, 40, 719-29. 1953
- BROWN, A. H., and WEBSTER, G. C. The influence of light on the rate of respiration of the blue green alga *Anabaena*. *Amer. Journ. Bot.*, 40, 753-8. 1953
- BROWN, A. L., and GODDARD, D. R. Cytochrome oxidase in wheat embryos. *Amer. Journ. Bot.*, 28, 319-24. 1941
- BROWN, J. W. Respiration of acorns as related to temperature and after-ripening. *Plant Physiol.*, 14, 621-45. 1939
- BUCHNER, E. Alkoholische Gärung ohne Hefezellen. *Ber. deut. chem. Ges.*, 30, 117-24, 1110-13. 1897
- BUTKEWITSCH, W. Umwandlung der Eiweissstoffe durch die niederen Pilze im Zusammenhange mit einigen Bedingungen ihrer Entwicklung. *Jahr. f. wiss. Bot.*, 38, 147-240. 1903
- CALDWELL, J. Studies in the respiration of apples at various pressures of oxygen. *Journ. Exp. Bot.*, 7, 326-334. 1956
- CHODAT, R., and BACH, A. Untersuchungen über die Rolle der Peroxyde in der Chemie der lebenden Zelle. V. Zerlegung der sogenannten Oxydasen in Oxygenasen

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

- und Peroxygenasen. *Ber. deut. chem. Ges.*, **36**, 606-8. 1903.
- CHOUDHURY, J. K. Researches on plant respiration. V. On the respiration of some storage organs in different oxygen concentrations. *Proc. Roy. Soc., B*, **127**, 238-257. 1939
- CHUDIAKOW, N. V. Beiträge zur Kenntnis der intramolekularen Athmung. *Landw. Jahrb.*, **23**, 333-89. 1894
- CLAUSEN, H. Beiträge zu Kenntniss der Athmung der Gewächse und des pflanzlichen Stoffwechsels. *Landw. Jahrb.*, **19**, 893-930. 1890
- CONN, E., VENNESLAND, B., and KRAEMER, L. M. Distribution of a triphosphopyridine nucleotide-specific enzyme catalysing the reversible oxidative decarboxylation of malic acid in higher plants. *Arch. Biochem.*, **23**, 179-97. 1949
- CORI, G. T., COLOWICK, S. P. and CORI, C. F. The enzymic conversion of glucose-1-phosphoric ester to 6-ester in tissue extracts. *Journ. Biol. Chem.*, **124**, 543-55. 1938
- COULTHARD, C. E., MICHAELIS, R., SHORT, W. F., SYKES, G., SKRIMSHIRE, G. E. H., STANDFAST, A. F. B., BIRKINSHAW, J. H., and RAISTRICK, H. Notatin: an anti-bacterial glucose-aerodehydrogenase from *Penicillium notatum* Westling and *Penicillium resticulosum* sp. nov. *Biochem. Journ.*, **39**, 24-36. 1945
- CRUICKSHANK, W. Some observations of the nature of sugar, etc. In *An Account of two Cases of Diabetes mellitus*, by John Rollo, Vol. II. London, 1797
- DALY, J. M., SAYRE, R. M., and PAZUR, J. H. The hexose monophosphate shunt as the major respiratory pathway during sporulation of rust of safflower. *Plant Physiol.*, **32**, 44-8. 1957
- DAMODARAN, M., and NAIR, K. R. Glutamic acid dehydro-

LITERATURE CITED IN THE TEXT

- genase from germinating seeds. *Biochem. Journ.*, **32**, 1064-74. 1938
- DAVIS, E. A. Likelihood of photorespiration of light-inhibited respiration in green plants. *Science*, **112**, 113-115. 1950
- DE BOER, S. R. Respiration of Phycomyces. *Rec. trav. bot. Néerlandais*, **25**, 117-240. 1928
- DENNY, F. E. Respiration of Gladiolus corms during prolonged dormancy. *Contrib. Boyce Thompson Inst.*, **10**, 453-60. 1939
- Accumulation of carbon dioxide in potato tuber tissue under conditions for the continuous removal of the exhaled gas. *Contrib. Boyce Thompson Inst.*, **14**, 315-322. 1946
- Changes in oxygen, carbon dioxide, and pressure caused by plant tissue in a closed space. *Contrib. Boyce Thompson Inst.*, **14**, 383-96. 1947
- Respiration rate of plant tissue under conditions for the progressive partial depletion of the oxygen supply. *Contrib. Boyce Thompson Inst.*, **14**, 419-42. 1947
- Effect upon plant respiration caused by changes in the oxygen concentration in the range immediately below that of normal air. *Contrib. Boyce Thompson Inst.*, **15**, 61-70. 1948
- DETMER, W. Vergleichende Physiologie des Keimungsprocesses der Samen. Jena, 1880
- DEVAUX, H. Porosité du fruit des Cucurbitacées. *Rev. gén. Bot.*, **3**, 49-56. 1891
- Asphyxie spontanée et production d'alcool dans les tissus profonds des tiges ligneuses poussant dans les conditions naturelles. *Comp. rend.*, **128**, 1346-9. 1899
- DIAKONOW, N. W. Intramolekulare Athmung und Gährthätigkeit der Schimmelpilze. *Ber. deut. bot. Ges.*, **4**, 2-7. 1886

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

- Ueber die sogenannte intramolekulare Athmung der Pflanzen. *Ber. deut. bot. Ges.*, **4**, 411-13. 1886
- DIXON, M. Multi-enzyme systems. Cambridge, 1949
- EMBDEN, G., and DEUTIGE, H. J. Über die Bedeutung der Phosphoglycerinsäure für die Glykolyse in der Muskulatur. *Zeitschr. f. physiol. Chem.*, **230**, 24-49. 1934
- EMBDEN, G., DEUTIGE, H. J., and KRAFT, G. Über die intermediären Vorgänge bei der Glykolyse in der Muskulatur. *Klin. Wochenschr.*, **12**, 213-15. 1933
- Über das Vorkommen einer optisch-aktiven Phosphoglycerinsäure bei den Glykolyse in der Muskulatur. *Zeitschr. f. physiol. Chem.*, **230**, 12-28. 1934
- EMBDEN, G., and JOST, H. Über die Zwischenstufen der Glykolyse in der quergestreiften Muskulatur. *Zeitschr. f. physiol. Chem.*, **230**, 68-89. 1934
- ENY, D. M. Respiration studies on *Chlorella*. II. Influence of various organic acids on gas exchange. *Plant Physiol.*, **26**, 268-89. 1951
- EULER, H. V., and MYRBACK, K. Gärungs-Co-Enzyme (Co-Zymase) der Hefe. I. *Zeitschr. f. physiol. Chem.*, **131**, 179-203. 1923
- FERNANDES, D. S. Aerobe und anaerobe Atmung bei Keimlingen von *Pisum sativum*. *Rec. trav. bot. Néerlandais*, **20**, 107-256. 1923
- FIDLER, J. C. The conserving influence of oxygen on respirable substrate. *Ann. Bot.*, N.S. **12**, 421-6. 1948,
- A comparison of the aerobic and anaerobic respiration of apples. *Journ. Exp. Bot.*, **2**, 49-64. 1951
- FOLKES, B. F., WILLIS, A. J., and YEMM, E. W. The respiration of barley plants. VII. The metabolism of nitrogen and respiration in seedlings. *New Phytol.*, **51**, 317-41. 1952
- FORWARD, D. F. The respiration of barley seedlings in

LITERATURE CITED IN THE TEXT

- relation to oxygen supply. I. An analytical account of experiments. *New Phytol.*, **50**, 297-324. 1952
- The respiration of barley seedlings in relation to oxygen supply. II. A metabolic interpretation. *New Phytol.*, **50**, 325-56. 1952
- FRITZ, G. J., and BEEVERS, H. Lipoxidase and the oxygen absorption of homogenates from corn seedlings. *Arch. Biochem. Biophys.*, **55**, 436-46. 1955
- FRITZ, G. J., MILLER, W. G., BURRIS, R. H., and ANDERSON, L. Direct incorporation of molecular oxygen into organic material by respiring corn seedlings. *Plant Physiol.*, **33**, 159-61. 1958
- GARREAU. De la respiration chez les plantes (1). *Ann. sci. nat., Bot.*, 3^e Sér., **15**, 5-36. 1851
- Nouvelles recherches sur la respiration des plantes. *Ann. sci. nat., Bot.*, 3^e Sér., **16**, 271-92. 1851
- GENEVOIS, L. Über Atmung und Gärung in grünen Pflanzen. II. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, **191**, 147-57. 1927
- GERBER, C. Étude comparée de la respiration des graines oléagineuses pendant leur développement et pendant leur germination—Relations entre cette respiration et les réactions chimiques dont la graine est la siège. *Actes du Congrès Internat. de Botanique*, 59-101. Paris, 1900
- GERHART, A. R. Respiration in strawberry fruits. *Bot. Gaz.*, **89**, 40-66. 1930
- GIBBS, M. Triosephosphate dehydrogenase and glucose-6-phosphate dehydrogenase in the pea plant. *Nature*, **170**, 164-5. 1952
- The respiration of the pea plant. Oxidation of hexose phosphate and pentose phosphate by cell-free extracts of pea leaves. *Plant Physiol.*, **29**, 34-9. 1954
- GIBBS, M., and BEEVERS, H. Glucose dissimilation in the higher plant. Effect of age of tissue. *Plant Physiol.*, **30**, 343-7. 1955

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

- GIRTON, R. E. Respiratory drifts of maize roots. *New Phytol.*, **57**, 89-105. 1958
- GODDARD, D. R., and MEEUSE, B. J. D. Respiration of higher plants. *Ann. Rev. Plant Physiol.*, **1**, 207-32. 1950
- GODLEWSKI, E., and POLZENIUSZ, F. Ueber die intramolekulare Athmung von in Wasser gebrachten Samen und über die dabei stattfindende Alkoholbildung. *Ann. Akad. Wiss. Krakau*, 1901. Reference in *Bot. Centralblatt*, **89**, 713. 1902
- GUSTAFSON, F. G. Growth studies on fruits. Respiration of tomato fruits. *Plant Physiol.*, **4**, 349-56. 1929
Production of alcohol and acetaldehyde by tomatoes. *Plant Physiol.*, **9**, 359-67. 1934
Äthylalkohol und Acetaldehyd in gewissen Arten von Kakteen. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, **272**, 172-9. 1934
- GUTHRIE, J. D. Isolation of citric acid from potato tubers. *Contrib. Boyce Thompson Inst.*, **8**, 295-6. 1936
- HACKETT, D. P. Respiratory mechanisms in the aroid spadix. *Journ. Exp. Bot.*, **8**, 157-71. 1957
- HACKETT, D. P., and SCHEIDERMAN, H. A. Terminal oxidases and growth in plant tissues. I. The terminal oxidase mediating growth of *Avena* coleoptile and *Pisum* stem sections. *Arch. Biochem. Biophys.*, **47**, 190-204. 1953
- HACKNEY, F. M. V. Studies in the metabolism of apples. VI. Preliminary investigations on the respiration of sliced apple tissue. *Proc. Linnean Soc. N.S.W.*, **70**, 333-45. 1947
Studies in the metabolism of apples. VII. A study of the polyphenolase system in apples. *Proc. Linnean Soc. N.S.W.*, **73**, 439-54. 1949
Studies in the metabolism of apples. VIII. Ascorbic acid oxidase in apples. *Proc. Linnean Soc. N.S.W.*, **73**, 455-465. 1949

LITERATURE CITED IN THE TEXT

- HANES, C. S. The breakdown and synthesis of starch by an enzyme system from pea seeds. *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, B, 128, 421-50. 1940
- The reversible formation of starch from glucose-1-phosphate catalysed by potato phosphorylase. *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, B, 129, 174-208. 1940
- HANES, C. S., and BARKER, J. The physiological action of cyanide. I. The effects of cyanide on the respiration and sugar content of the potato at 15° C. *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, B, 108, 95-118. 1931
- HARDEN, A., and YOUNG, W. J. The alcoholic ferment of yeast-juice. *Proc. Physiol. Soc.*, i-ii, Nov. 12, 1904, in *Journ. Physiol.*, 32, 1904-5
- The function of phosphates in the fermentation of glucose by yeast-juice. *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, B, 80, 299-311. 1908
- HARRINGTON, G. T. Respiration of apple seeds. *Journ. Agric. Res.*, 23, 117-30. 1923
- HAWORTH, W. N. The constitution of sugars. London, 1929
- HEATH, O. V. S. Studies in stomatal behaviour. V. The role of carbon dioxide in the light response of stomata. *Journ. Exp. Bot.*, 1, 29-62. 1950
- HILL, G. R. Respiration of fruits and growing plant tissues in certain gases, with reference to ventilation and fruit storage. *Cornell Univ. Agric. Exper. Sta. Bull.*, 330. 1913
- HOPKINS, E. F. Variation in sugar content in potato tubers caused by wounding and its possible relation to respiration. *Bot. Gaz.*, 84, 75-88. 1927
- HORECKER, B. L., and SMYRNIOTIS, P. Z. Transaldolase; the formation of fructose-6-phosphate from sedoheptulose-7-phosphate. *Journ. Amer. Chem. Soc.*, 75, 2021-2. 1953

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

- HORECKER, B. L., SMYRNIOTIS, P. Z., and KLENOW, H.
The formation of sedoheptulose phosphate from pentose phosphate. *Journ. Biol. Chem.*, **205**, 668-82. 1953
- HOVER, J. M., and GUSTAFSON, F. G. Rate of respiration as related to age. *Journ. Gen. Physiol.*, **10**, 33-9. 1926
- HOWARD, F. D., and YAMAGUCHI, M. Respiration and the oxidative activity of particulate fractions from developing pepper fruits (*Capsicum annuum* L.). *Plant Physiol.*, **32**, 418-28. 1957
- INAMDAR, R. S., and SINGH, B. N. Studies in the respiration of tropical plants. I. Seasonal variations in aerobic and anaerobic respiration in the leaves of *Artocarpus integrifolia*. *Journ. Indian Bot. Soc.*, **6**, 133-212. 1927
- INGEN-HOUSZ, J. *Experiments upon Vegetables, discovering their great power of purifying the common air in the sunshine and of injuring it in the shade and at night; to which is joined a new method of examining the accurate degree of salubrity of the atmosphere.* London, 1779
- IRVING, ANNIE A. The effect of chloroform upon respiration and assimilation. *Ann. Bot.*, **25**, 1077-99. 1911
- IVANOV, L. (IWANOFF, L.). Zur Frage nach der Beteiligung der Zwischenprodukte der alkoholischen Gärung an der Sauerstoffatmung. *Ber. deut. bot. Ges.*, **32**, 191-6. 1914
- IVANOV, N. (IWANOFF, N.). Die Wirkung der nützlichen und schädlichen Stimulatoren auf die Atmung der lebenden und abgetoteten Pflanzen. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, **32**, 74-96. 1911
- JAMES, G. M., and JAMES, W. O. The formation of pyruvic acid in barley respiration. *New Phyt.*, **39**, 266-70. 1940
- JAMES, W. O. *Plant Respiration.* Oxford, 1953
The terminal oxidases in the respiration of the embryos and young roots of barley. *Proc. Roy. Soc., B*, **141**, 280-99. 1953

LITERATURE CITED IN THE TEXT

- JAMES, W. O., and ARNEY, S. E. Phosphorylation and respiration in barley. *New Phyt.*, **38**, 340-51. 1939
- JAMES, W. O., and BEEVERS, H. The respiration of *Arum* spadix. A rapid respiration, resistant to cyanide. *New Phyt.*, **49**, 353-74. 1950
- JAMES, W. O., and DAS, V. S. R. The organization of respiration in chlorophyllous cells. *New Phytol.*, **56**, 325-43. 1957
- JAMES, W. O., and ELLIOTT, D. C. A flavoprotein from *Arum* spadix. *New Phytol.*, **57**, 230-4. 1958
- JAMES, W. O., HEARD, C. R. C., and JAMES, G. M. On the oxidative decomposition of hexosediphosphate by barley. The role of ascorbic acid. *New Phyt.*, **43**, 62-74. 1944
- JAMES, W. O., and JAMES, A. L. The respiration of barley germinating in the dark. *New Phytol.*, **39**, 145-76. 1940
- JAMES, W. O., JAMES, G. M., and BUNTING, A. H. On the method of formation of pyruvic acid by barley. *Biochem. Journ.*, **35**, 588-94. 1939
- JAMES, W. O., and LUNDEGÅRDH, H. The cytochrome system of young barley roots. *Proc. Roy. Soc., B*, **150**, 7-12. 1959
- JAMES, W. O., and NORVAL, I. F. The respiratory decomposition of pyruvic acid by barley. *New Phyt.*, **37**, 455-73. 1938
- JAMES, W. O., and SLATER, W. G. The aerobic utilization of pyruvate in plant tissues. *Proc. Roy. Soc., B*, **150**, 192-9. 1959
- JENSEN, P. BOYSEN. Studien über den genetischen Zusammenhang zwischen der normalen und intramolekularen Atmung der Pflanzen. *Kgl. Danske Videnskabernes Selskab. Biol. Med.*, **IV**, **1**, 34 pp. 1923
- The connexion between the oxybiotic and anoxybiotic respiration in plants. Fifth International Botanical

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

- Congress, Cambridge, 1930. *Report of Proceedings*, 421-2. Publ. Cambridge, 1931
- JÖNSSON, B. Recherches sur la respiration et l'assimilation des Muscinées. *Comp. rend.*, 119, 440-3. 1894
- KARLSEN, A. Comparative studies on respiration. XXVIII. The effect of anesthetics on the production of carbon dioxide by wheat under aërobic and anaërobic conditions. *Amer. Journ. Bot.*, 12, 619-24. 1925
- KEILIN, D. Cytochrome and respiratory enzymes. *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, B, 104, 206-52. 1929
- KEILIN, D., and HARTREE, E. F. Properties of catalase. Catalysis of coupled oxidation of alcohols. *Biochem. Journ.*, 39, 293-301. 1945
- KERMACK, W. O. [Recent Advances in] Biochemistry. Some reactions and enzymes concerned in glycolysis. *Sci. Prog.*, 37, 283-93. 1949
- KIDD, F. The controlling influence of carbon dioxide in the maturation, dormancy, and germination of seeds. Part I. *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, B, 87, 408-21. 1914
- The controlling influence of carbon dioxide in the maturation, dormancy, and germination of seeds. Part II. *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, B, 87, 609-25. 1914
- The controlling influence of carbon dioxide. Part III. The retarding effect of carbon dioxide on respiration. *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, B, 89, 136-56. 1915
- KIDD, F., and WEST, C. Physiology of fruit. I. Changes in the respiratory activity of apples during their senescence at different temperatures. *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, B, 106, 93-109. 1930
- KIDD, F., WEST, C., and BRIGGS, G. E. A quantitative analysis of the growth of *Helianthus annuus*. Part I. The respiration of the plant and of its parts throughout the life cycle. *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, B, 92, 368-84. 1921

LITERATURE CITED IN THE TEXT

KIDD, F., WEST, C., GRIFFITHS, D. G., and POTTER, N. A.

An investigation on the changes in chemical composition and respiration during the ripening and storage of Conference pears. *Ann. Bot.*, N.S., 4, 1-30. 1940

KLEIN, G., and FIRSCHLE, K. Acetaldehyd als Zwischenprodukt der Pflanzenatmung. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, 168, 340-60. 1926

Quantitative Untersuchungen über die Verwertbarkeit verschiedener Stoffe für die Pflanzenatmung. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, 176, 20-31. 1926

KOBEL, M., and SCHEUER, M. Über den Kohlenhydratumsatz im Tabakblatt. Nachweis von Methylglyoxal als Zwischenprodukt im Stoffwechsel grüner Blätter. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, 216, 216-23. 1929

KOSINSKI, I. Die Athmung bei Hungerzuständen und unter Einwirkung von mechanischen und chemischen Reizmitteln bei *Aspergillus niger*. *Jahrb. f. wiss. Bot.*, 37, 137-204. 1902

KOSTYCHEV, S. (KOSTYTSCHEW, S.). Der Einfluss des Substrates auf die anaërobe Athmung der Schimmelpilze. *Ber. deut. bot. Ges.*, 20, 327-34. 1902

Über die normale und die anaërobe Athmung bei Abwesenheit von Zucker. *Jahrb. f. wiss. Bot.*, 40, 563-92. 1904

Über die Alkoholgärung von *Aspergillus niger*. *Ber. deut. bot. Ges.*, 25, 44-50. 1907

Über Alkoholgärung. I. Über die Bildung von Acetaldehyd bei der alkoholischen Zuckergärung. *Zeitschr. physiol. Chem.*, 79, 130-45. 1912

Plant Respiration. Authorized edition in English with editorial notes. Translated and edited by Charles J. Lyon. Philadelphia, 1927

KOSTYCHEV, S. (KOSTYTSCHEW, S.), HÜBBENET, E., and SCHELOUMOFF, A. Über die Bildung von Acetaldehyd

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

- bei den anaeroben Atmung der Pappelblüten. *Zeitschr. f. physiol. Chem.*, **83**, 105-11. 1913
- KRAUS, G. Ueber die Bluthenwärme bei *Arum italicum*. *Abhandl. Naturf. Ges. zu Halle*, **16**. 1882
- KREBS, H. A., and EGGLESTON, L. V. The oxidation of pyruvate in pigeon breast muscle. *Biochem. Journ.*, **34**, 293-301. 1940
- KUIJPER, J. Über den Einfluss der Temperatur auf die Atmung der höheren Pflanzen. *Rec. tray. bot. Néerlandais*, **7**, 131-240. 1910
- LAMARCK, J. B. A. P. M. DE. *Flore Française*. 3 vols. Paris, 1778
- LEACH, W. Researches on plant respiration. IV. The relation between the respiration in air and in nitrogen of certain seeds during germination. (b) Seeds in which carbohydrates constitute the chief food reserve. *Proc. Roy. Soc., B*, **119**, 507-21. 1936
- Studies on the metabolism of cereal grains. III. The influence of atmospheric humidity and mould infection on the carbon dioxide output of wheat. *Canadian Journ. Res.*, **C, 22**, 150-61. 1944
- LEACH, W., and DENT, K. W. Researches on plant respiration. III. The relation between the respiration in air and in nitrogen of certain seeds during germination. (a) Seeds in which fats constitute the chief food reserve. *Proc. Roy. Soc., B*, **116**, 150-69. 1934
- LECHARTIER, G., and BELLAMY, F. Étude sur les gaz produits par les fruits. *Comp. rend.*, **69**, 356-60. 1869
- De la fermentation des fruits. *Comp. rend.*, **69**, 466-9. 1869
- De la fermentation des fruits. *Comp. rend.*, **75**, 1203-6. 1872
- De la fermentation des pommes et des poires. *Comp. rend.*, **79**, 949-52. 1874
- LEVY, H., and SCHADE, A. L., with the technical assistance

LITERATURE CITED IN THE TEXT

- of L. BERGMANN and S. HARRIS. Studies in the respiration of the white potato. II. Terminal oxidase system of potato tuber respiration. *Arch. Biochem.*, **19**, 273-286. 1948
- LINK, G. K. K., KLEIN, R. M., and BARRON, E. S. S. Metabolism of slices of tomato stem. *Journ. Exp. Bot.*, **3**, 216-36. 1952.
- LIPMANN, F. Metabolic generation and utilization of phosphate bond energy. *Advances in Enzymology*, **1**, 99-162. 1941
- LIVINGSTON, E., and FRANCK, J. Assimilation and respiration of excised leaves at high concentrations of carbon dioxide. *Amer. J. Bot.*, **27**, 449-58. 1940
- LOHMANN, K. Konstitution der Adenylpyrophosphorsäure und Adenosindiphosphorsäure. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, **282**, 120-3. 1935
- LUNDEGÅRDH, H., and BURSTRÖM, H. Untersuchungen über die Salzaufnahme der Pflanze. III. Quantitative Beziehungen zwischen Atmung und Anionenaufnahme. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, **261**, 235-51. 1933
- LUNDGAARD, E. Die Monojodessigsäurewirkung auf die enzymatische Kohlenhydratspaltung. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, **220**, 1-7. 1930
- LYON, C. J. The effect of phosphates on respiration. *Journ. Gen. Physiol.*, **6**, 299-306. 1924.
- MCCALL, E. R., and GUTHRIE, J. D. Organic acid content of raw cotton fiber. Isolation of *l*-malic acid and citric acid from cotton fiber. *Journ. Amer. Chem. Soc.*, **67**, 2220-1. 1945
- MACHLIS, L. The influence of some respiratory inhibitors and intermediates on respiration and salt accumulation. *Amer. Journ. Bot.*, **31**, 183-92. 1944
- MAGNESS, J. R. Composition of gases in intercellular spaces of apples and potatoes. *Bot. Gaz.*, **70**, 308-16. 1920

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

- MAIGE, A., and NICOLAS, G. Recherches sur l'influence des solutions sucrées de divers degrés de concentration sur la respiration, la turgescence et la croissance de la cellule. *Ann. sci. nat., Bot.*, Sér. 9, 12, 315-68. 1910
- MAIGE, G. Recherches sur la respiration des différentes pièces florales. *Ann. sci. nat., Bot.*, Sér. 9, 14, 1-62. 1911
- MALPIGHI, M. *Anatomes plantarum pars altera*. Londini, 1679
- MAQUENNE, L. Sur la respiration des feuilles. *Comp. rend.*, 119, 100-2. 1894
Sur le mécanisme de la respiration végétale. *Comp. rend.*, 119, 697-9. 1894
- MAQUENNE, L., and DEMOUSSY, E. Sur la valeur des coefficients chlorophylliens et leur rapports avec les quotients respiratoires réels. *Comp. rend.*, 156, 506-12. 1913
- MARSH, P. B., and GODDARD, D. R. Respiration and fermentation in the carrot, *Daucus Carota*. I. Respiration. *Amer. J. Bot.*, 26, 724-8. 1939
Respiration and fermentation in the carrot, *Daucus Carota*. II. Fermentation and the Pasteur effect. *Amer. J. Bot.*, 26, 767-72. 1939
- MATTHAEI, GABRIELLE L. C. Experimental Researches on vegetable assimilation and respiration. III. On the effect of temperature on carbon dioxide assimilation. *Phil. Trans. Roy. Soc. London, B*, 197, 47-105. 1904
- MAYER, A. Über den Verlauf der Athmung beim keimenden Weizen. *Die landw. Versuchs-Stationen*, 18, 245-279. 1875
- MERRY, J., and GODDARD, D. R. A respiratory study of barley grains and seedlings. *Proc. Rochester Acad. Sci.*, 8, 28-44. 1941
- MEYERHOF, O. Über den Einfluss des Sauerstoffs auf die

LITERATURE CITED IN THE TEXT

- alkoholische Gärung der Hefe. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, **162**, 43-86. 1925
- MEYERHOF, O. Recent investigations on the aerobic and anaerobic metabolism of carbohydrates. *Journ. Gen. Physiol.*, **8**, 531-42. 1927
- MEYERHOF, O., and BECK, L. v. Triose phosphate isomerase. *Journ. Biol. Chem.*, **156**, 109-20. 1944
- MEYERHOF, O., and KIESSLING, W. Über das Auftreten und den Umsatz der α -Glycerinphosphorsäure bei der enzymatischen Kohlenhydratspaltung. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, **264**, 40-71. 1933
- Über die phosphorylierten Zwischenprodukte und die letzten Phasen der alkoholischen Gärung. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, **267**, 313-48. 1933
- MEYERHOF, O., LOHMANN, K., and MEIER, R. Über die Synthese des Kohlenhydrats im Muskel. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, **157**, 459-91. 1925
- MEYERHOF, O., and McEACHERN, D. Über anaerobe Bildung und Schwund von Brenztraubensäure in der Muskulatur. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, **260**, 417-45. 1933
- MILHAUD, G., BENSON, A. A., and CALVIN, M. Metabolism of pyruvic acid- $2C^{14}$ and hydroxypyruvic acid- $2C^{14}$ in algae. *Journ. Biol. Chem.*, **218**, 599-606. 1956
- MILLERD, A., BONNER, J., AXELROD, B., and BANDURSKI, R. Oxidative and phosphorylative activity of plant mitochondria. *Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci.*, **37**, 855-62. 1951
- MOHL, H. VON. *Grundzüge der Anatomie und Physiologie der vegetabilischen Zelle*. Braunschweig, 1851
- MORGAN, E. J. Pyruvic acid in the juice of the onion (*Allium. Cepa*). *Nature*, **157**, 512. 1946
- MÜLLER, D. Ein neues Enzym—Glycoseoxydase—aus *Aspergillus niger*. *Den Kgl. Veterinær-og Landbohøjskole Aarskrift*, 329-31. 1925

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

- Studien über ein neues Enzym Glykoseoxydase. I.
Biochem. Zeitschr., **199**, 136-70. 1928
- MÜLLER-THURGAU, H., and SCHNEIDER-ORELLI, O.
Beiträge zur Kenntnis der Lebensvorgänge in ruhenden
Pflanzenteilen. *Flora*, **101**, 309-72. 1910
- NABOKICH, A. J. Über anaeroben Stoffwechsel von Samen in
Salpeterlösungen. *Ber. deut. bot. Ges.*, **21**, 398-403. 1903
Über die intramolekulare Atmung der höheren Pflanzen.
Ber. deut. bot. Ges., **21**, 467-76. 1903
- NÄGELI, C. Theorie der Gärung. München, 1879
- NANCE, J. P. (see also PHILLIPS, J. W.). A comparison
of carbohydrate loss and carbon dioxide production
during fermentation by barley roots. *Amer. Journ.
Bot.*, **36**, 274-6. 1949
- NEAL, M. J., and GIRTON, R. E. The Pasteur effect in maize.
Amer. Journ. Bot., **42**, 733-7. 1955
- NĚMEC, A., and DUCHON, F. Versuche über Vorkommen
und Wirkung der Saccharophosphatase im Pflanzen-
organismus. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, **119-20**, 73-80. 1921
- NEUBERG, C. Von der Chemie der Gärungserscheinungen.
Ber. deut. chem. Ges., **55**, 3624-38. 1922
- NEUBERG, C., and COHEN, CLARA. Über die Bildung von
Acetaldehyd und die Verwirklichung der zweiten
Vergärungsform bei verschiedenen Pilzen. *Biochem.
Zeitschr.*, **122**, 204-24. 1921
- NEUBERG, C., and GORR, G. Über die Mechanismus
der Milchsäurebildung bei Phanerogamen. *Biochem.
Zeitschr.*, **171**, 475-84. 1926
- NEUBERG, C., and GOTTSCHALK, A. Beobachtungen über
den Verlauf der anaeroben Pflanzenatmung. *Biochem.
Zeitschr.*, **151**, 167-8. 1924
- Über den Nachweis von Acetaldehyd als Zwischenstufe
bei der anaeroben Atmung höherer Pflanzen. *Biochem.
Zeitschr.*, **160**, 256-60. 1925

LITERATURE CITED IN THE TEXT

- NEUBERG, C., and KARCZAG, L. Über zuckerfreie Hefegärungen. IV. Carboxylase, ein neues Enzym der Hefe. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, 36, 68-75. 1911
- Über zuckerfreie Hefegärungen. V. Zur Kenntnis der Carboxylase. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, 36, 76-81. 1911
- NEUBERG, C., and KOBEL, M. Umwandlung von Phosphoglycerinsäure durch die Fermente gekeimter Erbsen und Bohnen. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, 272, 457-8. 1934
- NEUBERG, C., and REINFURTH, ELSA. Die Festlegung der Aldehydstufe bei der alkoholischen Gärung. Ein experimenteller Beweis der Acetaldehyd-Brenztraubensäuretheorie. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, 89, 365-414. 1918
- NICOLAS, M. G. Contribution à l'étude des variations de la respiration des végétaux avec l'âge. *Rev. gén. Bot.*, 30, 209-25. 1918
- Anthocyane et échanges respiratoires des feuilles. *Comp. rend.*, 167, 130-3. 1918
- OLNEY, A. J. Temperature and respiration of ripening bananas. *Bot. Gaz.*, 82, 415-26. 1926
- ONSLow, MURIEL WHELDALe. The principles of plant biochemistry. Part I. Cambridge, 1931
- ONSLow, MURIEL WHELDALe, and ROBINSON, MURIEL E. R. Oxidizing enzymes. IX. On the Mechanism of Plant Oxidases. *Biochem. Journ.*, 20, 1138-45. 1926
- OOTa, Y., FUJII, R., and SUNObE, Y. Studies on the connexion between sucrose formation and respiration in germinating bean cotyledons. *Physiol. Plantarum*, 9, 38-50. 1956
- OVERHOLSER, E. L., HARDY, M. B., and LOCKLIN, H. D. Respiration studies of strawberries. *Plant Physiol.*, 6, 549-57. 1931
- PALLADIN, W. (PALLADINE, W.). Recherches sur la corrélation entre la respiration des plantes et les substances azotées actives. *Rev. gén. Bot.*, 8, 225-48. 1896

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

- Ueber normale und intramolekulare Atmung der einzelligen Alge *Chlorothecium saccharophilum*. *Centralbl. f. Bakt.*, 2 Abt., **11**, 146-53. 1903
- Das Blut der Pflanzen. *Ber. deut. bot. Ges.*, **26a**, 125-32. 1908
- Die Verbreitung der Atmungschromogene bei den Pflanzen. *Ber. deut. bot. Ges.*, **26a**, 378-89. 1908
- Über die Bildung der Atmungschromogene in den Pflanzen. *Ber. deut. bot. Ges.*, **26a**, 389-94. 1908
- PARIJA, P. Analytic studies in plant respiration. II. The respiration of apples in nitrogen and its relation to respiration in air. *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, B, **103**, 446-90. 1928
- PASTEUR, L. Faits nouveaux pour servir à la connaissance de la théorie des fermentations proprement dites. *Comp. rend.*, **75**, 784-90. 1872
- PFEFFER, W. Das Wesen und die Bedeutung der Athmung in der Pflanze. *Landw. Jahrb.*, **7**, 805-34. 1878
- Über intramolekulare Athmung. *Untersuchungen aus dem bot. Inst. zu Tübingen*, **1**, 636-85. 1885
- PFLÜGER, E. Beiträge zur Lehre von der Respiration. I. Ueber die physiologische Verbrennung in den lebendigen Organismen. *Arch. f. d. ges. Physiol.*, **10**, 251-367. 1875
- PHILLIPS, J. W. (see also NANCE, J. P.). Studies on fermentation in rice and barley. *Amer. Journ. Bot.*, **34**, 62-72. 1947
- PLATENIUS, H. Effect of temperature on the respiration rate and the respiratory quotient of some vegetables. *Plant Physiol.*, **17**, 179-97. 1942
- POLOVZOV, V. *Researches on Plant Respiration*. (In Russian.) 1901. (Cited on the authority of Kostychev, 1927)
- PRATT, H. K., and BIALE, J. B. Relation of the production

LITERATURE CITED IN THE TEXT

- of an active emanation to respiration in the avocado fruit. *Plant Physiol.*, **19**, 519-28. 1944
- PRIANISCHNIKOV, D. Sur le rôle de l'asparagine dans le transformation des matières azotées chez les plantes. *Rev. gén. Bot.*, **36**, 108-22. 1924
- PURIEWITSCH, K. Physiologische Untersuchungen über Pflanzenathmung. *Jahrb. f. wiss. Bot.*, **35**, 573-610. 1900
- RAMSTAD, P. E., and GEDDES, W. F. The respiration and storage behaviour of soybeans. *Univ. Minnesota Agric. Exper. Sta. Tech. Bull.*, **156**, 54 pp. 1942.
- REED, L. J., and DE BUSK, B. G. Mechanism of enzymatic oxydative decarboxylation of pyruvate. *Journ. Amer. Chem. Soc.*, **75**, 1261-3. 1953
- RICHARDS, F. J. Physiological studies in plant nutrition. VIII. The relation of respiration rate to the carbohydrate and nitrogen metabolism of the barley leaf as determined by phosphorus and potassium supply. *Ann. Bot., N.S.*, **2**, 491-534. 1938
- RICHARDS, H. M. The respiration of wounded plants. *Ann. Bot.*, **10**, 531-82. 1896
- RISCHAVI, L. Zur Frage über die Athmung der Pflanzen. *Schriften der neurussischen Ges. der Naturforscher*, **5**, 50 pp. 1877. (In Russian. Abstract in *Just's Botan. Jahresber.*, p. 271. 1879)
- ROBERTSON, R. N. Studies in the metabolism of plant cells. I. Accumulation of chlorides by plant cells and its relation to respiration. *Australian J. Exp. Biol. and Med. Sci.*, **19**, 265-78. 1941
- ROUX, E. R. Respiration and maturity in peaches and plums. *Ann. Bot., N.S.*, **4**, 317-27. 1940
- SACHS, J. *Vorlesungen über Pflanzenphysiologie*. Leipzig, 1882. (English Translation by H. M. Ward: *Lectures on the Physiology of Plants*. Oxford, 1887)

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

- SALTMAN, P. Hexokinase in higher plants. *Journ. Biol. Chem.*, **200**, 145-54. 1953
- SAUSSURE, T. DE. La formation de l'acide carbonique est-elle essentielle à la végétation? *Ann. de Chim.*, **24**, 135-49. 1797
- Recherches chimiques sur la végétation. Paris, 1804
- De l'action des fleurs sur l'air, et de leur chaleur propre. *Ann. de Chim. et de Phys.*, **21**, 279-303. 1822
- SCHADE, A. L., BERGMANN, L., and BYER, A. Studies on the respiration of the white potato. I. Preliminary investigation of the endogenous respiration of potato slices and catechol oxidase activity. *Arch. Biochem.*, **18**, 85-96. 1948
- SCHADE, A. L., and LEVY, H. Studies on the respiration of the white potato. III. Changes in the terminal oxidase pattern of potato tissue associated with time of suspension in water. *Arch. Biochem.*, **20**, 211-19. 1949
- SCHEELE, C. W. *Chemische Abhandlungen von Luft und Feuer*. 1777
- SEIFRIZ, W. Anaerobic respiration. *Science*, **101**, 88-9. 1945
- SENEBIER, J. *Physiologie végétale, contenant une description des Organes des Plantes, et une exposition des Phénomènes produits par leur organisation*. 5 vols. Genève, 1800
- SIEGELMAN, H. W., CHOW, C. T., and BIALE, J. B. Respiration of developing rose petals. *Plant Physiol.*, **33**, 403-9. 1958
- SNOW, D., and WRIGHT, N. C. The respiration rate and loss of dry matter from stored bran. *Journ. Agric. Sci.*, **35**, 126-32. 1945
- SPOEHR, H. A., and MCGEE, J. M. Studies in plant respiration and photosynthesis. *Carnegie Inst. Washington, Publ. No. 325*, Washington, D.C. 1923

LITERATURE CITED IN THE TEXT

- STAFFORD, H. A. Intracellular localization of enzymes in pea seedlings. *Physiol. Plantarum*, **4**, 696-741. 1951
- STANLEY, R. G., and CONN, E. E. Enzyme activity of mitochondria from germinating seedlings of sugar pine (*Pinus lambertiana* Dougl.). *Plant Physiol.*, **32**, 412-18. 1957
- STENLID, G. Some notes on the effect of sodium azide, 2,4-dinitrophenol, and ortho-phenanthroline upon oxygen consumption in green leaves. *Physiol. Plantarum*, **2**, 61-9. 1949
- STEWART, F. C., and PRESTON, C. The effect of salt concentration upon the metabolism of potato discs and the contrasted effect of potassium and calcium salts which have a common ion. *Plant Physiol.*, **16**, 85-116. 1941
- STICH, CONRAD. Die Athmung der Pflanzen bei verminderter Sauerstoffspannung und bei Verletzungen. *Flora* (N.R., **49**), **74**, 1-57. 1891
- STILES, W., and DENT, K. W. Researches on plant respiration. VI. The respiration in air and in nitrogen of thin slices of storage tissues. *Ann. Bot.*, N.S., **11**, 1-34. 1947
- STILES, W., and LEACH, W. On the use of the katharometer for the measurement of respiration. *Ann. Bot.*, **45**, 461-88. 1931
- Researches on plant respiration. II. Variations in the respiratory quotient during germination. *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, B, **113**, 405-28. 1933
- STOKLASA, J. Über das Enzym Lactolase, welches die Milchsäurebildung in der Pflanzenzelle verursacht. *Ber. deut. bot. Ges.*, **22**, 460-6. 1904
- STOKLASA, J., and CZERNY, F. Isolierung des die anaerobe Atmung der Zelle der hoher organisierten Pflanzen und Thiere bewirkenden Enzyms. *Ber. deut. chem. Ges.*, **36**, 622-34. 1903

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

- STUMPF, P. K. Carbohydrate metabolism in higher plants. III. Breakdown of fructose diphosphate by pea extracts. *Journ. Biol. Chem.*, **182**, 261-72. 1950
- SZENT-GYÖRGYI, A. On the formation of hexuronic acid in the respiration of the cabbage leaf. *Journ. Biol. Chem.*, **90**, 385-93. 1931
- TANKÓ, B. Hexosephosphates produced by higher plants. *Biochem. Journ.*, **30**, 692-700. 1936
- TAYLOR, D. L. Influence of oxygen tension on respiration, fermentation and growth in wheat and rice. *Amer. J. Bot.*, **29**, 721-38. 1942
- THOMAS, M. The controlling influence of carbon dioxide. V. A. quantitative study of the production of ethyl alcohol and acetaldehyde by cells of the higher plants in relation to concentration of oxygen and carbon dioxide. *Biochem. Journ.*, **19**, 927-47. 1925
- The production of ethyl alcohol and acetaldehyde by apples in relation to the injuries occurring in storage. Part I. Injuries to apples occurring in the absence of oxygen and in certain mixtures of carbon dioxide and oxygen. *Ann. App. Biol.*, **16**, 444-57. 1929
- THOMAS, M., and FIDLER, J. C. Studies in zymasis. VI. Zymasis by apples in relation to oxygen concentration. *Biochem. Journ.*, **27**, 1629-42. 1933
- Studies in zymasis. VIII. The discovery and investigation of aerobic HCN zymasis in apples treated with hydrogen cyanide; and comparisons with other forms of zymasis. *New Phyt.*, **40**, 217-39. 1941
- Studies in zymasis. IX. The influence of HCN on the respiration of apples, and some evaluations of the 'Pasteur effect'. *New Phyt.*, **40**, 240-61. 1941
- THORNTON, N. C. Oxygen regulates the dormancy of the potato. *Contrib. Boyce Thompson Inst.*, **10**, 339-61. 1939

LITERATURE CITED IN THE TEXT

- THORNTON, N. C., and DENNY, F. E. Oxygen intake and carbon dioxide output of *Gladiolus* corms after storage under conditions which prolong the rest period. *Contrib. Boyce Thompson Inst.*, 11, 421-30. 1941
- TROUT, S. A. Experiments on the storage of pears in artificial atmospheres. *Journ. Pomol. Hort. Sci.*, 8, 78-91. 1930
- TURNER, E. R., and QUARTLEY, C. E. Studies in the respiratory and carbohydrate metabolism of plant tissues. VIII. An inhibition of respiration in peas induced by 'oxygen poisoning'. *Journ. Exp. Bot.*, 7, 362-71. 1956
- TURNER, J. S. On the relation between respiration and fermentation in yeast and the higher plants. A review of our knowledge of the effect of iodoacetate on the metabolism of plants. *New Phyt.*, 36, 142-69. 1938
- The respiratory metabolism of carrot tissue. I. Material and methods. *New Phyt.*, 37, 232-53. 1938
- The respiratory metabolism of carrot tissue. II. The effect of sodium monoiodoacetate on the respiration and fermentation. *New Phyt.*, 37, 289-311. 1938
- The respiratory metabolism of carrot tissue. III and IV. Part III. The drift of respiration and fermentation in tissue slices, with notes on the respiratory quotient. Part IV. Oxidative anabolism. *Australian Journ. Exp. Biol. and Med. Sci.*, 18, 275-306. 1940
- VENNESLAND, B. The β -carboxylases of plants. II. The distribution of oxaloacetic carboxylase in plant tissues. *Journ. Biol. Chem.*, 178, 591-7. 1949
- VENNESLAND, B., GOLLUB, M. C., and SPECK, J. F. The β -carboxylases of plants. I. Some properties of oxaloacetic carboxylase and its quantitative assay. *Journ. Biol. Chem.*, 178, 301-14. 1949
- VICKERY, H. B., PUCHER, G. W., WAKEMAN, A. J., and

RESPIRATION IN PLANTS

- LEAVENWORTH, C. S. The metabolism of amides in green plants. I. The amides of the tobacco leaf. *Journ. Biol. Chem.*, **119**, 369-82. 1937
- VIGNOL, M. *Contribution à l'étude des Bacteriacées*. 1889. (Cited from Kostychev, 1927)
- VIRTANEN, A. I., and LAINE, I. Investigations on the root nodule bacteria of leguminous plants. XXII. The excretion products of root nodules. The mechanism of N-fixation. *Biochem. Journ.*, **33**, 412-27. 1939
- WAGER, H. G. The effect of artificial wilting on the sugar content and respiration rate of maturing green peas. *New Phytol.*, **53**, 354-63. 1954
- WARBURG, O. Über die Grundlagen der Wielandschen Atmungstheorie. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, **141**, 518-23. 1923
- WARDLAW, C. W., and LEONARD, E. R. Studies in tropical fruits. IX. The respiration of bananas during ripening at tropical temperatures. *Ann. Bot.*, N.S., **4**, 269-315. 1940
- WEHNER, O. Untersuchungen über die chemische Beeinflussbarkeit des Assimilationsapparates. *Planta*, **6**, 543-90. 1928
- WHATLEY, F. R. Coenzymes in plants. *New Phytol.*, **50**, 244-57. 1951
- Isocitric dehydrogenase in green plants. *New Phytol.*, **50**, 258-67. 1951
- WHELDAL, M. On the direct guaiacum reaction given by plant extracts. *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, B, **84**, 121-4. 1911
- WIELAND, H. Über den Verlauf der Oxydationsvorgänge. *Ber. deut. chem. Ges.*, **55**, 3639-48. 1923
- WORTMANN, J. Ueber die Beziehungen der intramolekularen zur normalen Athmung der Pflanzen. *Arbeiten des bot. Inst. in Würzburg*, **2**, 500-20. 1880
- YEMM, E. W. The respiration of barley plants. II. Carbohydrate concentration, and carbon dioxide production

LITERATURE CITED IN THE TEXT

- in starving leaves. *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, B, 117, 504-525. 1935
- Respiration of barley plants. III. Protein catabolism in starving leaves. *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, B, 123, 243-73. 1937
- Respiration of barley plants. IV. Protein metabolism and the formation of amides in starving leaves. *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, B, 136, 632-49. 1950
- YOCUM, C. S., and HACKETT, D. P. Participation of cytochromes in the respiration of the aroid spadix. *Plant Physiol.*, 32, 186-91. 1957
- ZALESKI, W. Über die Rolle Reduktionsprozesse bei der Atmung der Pflanzen. *Ber. deut. bot. Ges.*, 28, 319-29. 1910
- Zum Studium der Atmungsenzyme der Pflanzen. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, 31, 195-214. 1911
- Über die Verbreitung der Carboxylase in den Pflanzen. *Ber. deut. bot. Ges.*, 31, 349-53. 1913
- Beiträge zur Kenntnis der Pflanzenatmung. *Ber. deut. bot. Ges.*, 31, 354-61. 1913
- ZALESKI, W., and MARX, E. Zur Frage der Wirkung der Phosphate auf die postmortale Atmung der Pflanzen. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, 43, 1-6. 1912
- Über die Carboxylase bei höheren Pflanzen. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, 47, 184-5. 1912
- Über die Rolle der Carboxylase in den Pflanzen. *Biochem. Zeitschr.*, 48, 175-80. 1913

Index

- Abies excelsa*, anaerobic respiration of, 84
 Abrahams, M. D., 145
 acetaldehyde in fruits, 93-4
 production in fermentation and respiration, 78, 93-4, 97, 101, 115-17, 125-6, 129, 138, 154
 acetic acid in anthocyanin-containing leaves, 30-1
 acetyl-coenzyme A., 140
 acids, effect of, on respiration, 68, 170
 organic, and respiration, 29-30, 56, 78, 163, 170
Acokanthera spectabilis, respiratory quotients of green and red leaves of, 31
 aconitase, 139, 141, 145
 acorns, respiratory quotient of, 31
 'active' fructose, 45
 adenosine, 117-18
 diphosphate, 118-20, 123-5, 139, 157, 177-8
 monophosphate, 118-19
 triphosphate, 117-20, 123-5, 139, 155, 177-8
 adenylic acid, 129
 ADP, *see* adenosine diphosphate
 aerobic and anaerobic respiration, connexion between, 96, 98-103, 127-30
 respiration, 5, 9-10, 15-71, 94, 96, 113, 127-73, 176-9
 Afanassjewa, M., 77
 age, respiration intensity and, 42-4
Ailanthus, respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
 Albaum, H. G., 119
 alcohol dehydrogenase, 126, 131
 in fruits, 93-4
 production of, under aerobic conditions, 74-5, 93-4
 alcoholic fermentation, 6, 74, 96-8, 101, 113-27
 aldehyde mutase, 125-6
 aldolase, 121
 aldoses, constitution of, 107-9
 allicine, 129
 alliinase, 129
 alliine, 129
Allium cepa, 129
 amides, formation of, 172
 amino acids, aerobic breakdown of, 106
 formation of, 172-3
 p-aminobutyric acid, 172
 ammonia production in respiration, 26-7, 106
 ammonium salts, utilization of, in respiration, 7
 amylase, 105
Anabaena, effect of light and oxygen concentration on respiration of, 56
 anaerobic respiration, 6, 56-60, 72-94, 161-9, 178-9
 zymasis, 93-4
 Anderson, D. A., 158
 androecium, respiration intensity of, 38
 aneurin, 125
 anion respiration, 67
 anthocyanin, respiratory quotients of leaves containing, 30-1
 apple fruit, alcohol and aldehyde in, 78, 93-4
 anaerobic respiration in, 78, 85-8, 93-4, 165-9
 effect of carbon dioxide concentration on respiration of, 65
 effect of high oxygen pressures on respiration of, 61-2
 effect of oxygen concentration on respiration of, 59, 61
 Pasteur effect in, 161, 163

INDEX

- apple fruit, respiration of, 44-6,
55, 58-9, 61-2, 85-8, 93-4,
165-9
 - terminal oxidases in, 150, 152
- apple seed, respiratory quotient
of, 21, 31
- Appleman, C. O., 91
- Araceae, respiratory activity in
spadix of, 153
- Arney, S. E., 128
- Arnon, D. I., 123
- aromatic sulphonic acids as in-
hibitors of carboxylase, 129
- artichoke tubers, effect of oxygen
concentration on respiration
of, 58-61
 - Pasteur effect in, 91, 163
- Artocarpus integrifolia*, respira-
tion of, 48-50
- Arum italicum*, evolution of heat
by flowers of, 4, 176
 - maculatum* anaerobic respira-
tion of, 84
 - cytochrome in spadix of,
153-4
 - effect of oxygen concentra-
tion on respiration of,
61
 - mitochondria in spadix of,
175
- Arum* sp., rapid respiration in
spadix of, 153
- ascorbic acid (and ascorbate),
135-6, 150, 152
 - acid oxidase, 132, 135-6, 147,
151-3, 175
- asparagine, 24-7, 106, 172
- Asparagus*, effect of water con-
tent on respiration of, 47
 - protein as respiratory sub-
strate in, 27
 - respiratory quotient of, 27
- aspartic acid, 24, 106, 172
- Aspergillus niger*, anaerobic re-
spiration of, 77, 103
 - glucose oxidase in, 103, 136
 - respiration intensity of, 37
 - respiratory quotient of, on
different media, 18
- Aspidistra*, respiratory quotient
of leaves of, 19
- ATP, *see* adenosine triphosphate
- Aubert, E., 29, 37
- Aucuba*, respiratory quotient of
leaves of, 19
- Audus, L. J., 69
- avocado, mitochondria in fruit
of, 175
 - respiration of, 45
- Axelrod, B., 119, 123, 156, 158,
175-6
- azide as inhibitor of enzyme
actions, 134-8, 151
 - as inhibitor of respiration, 150,
152
- Bach, A., 132
- Bacillus denitrificans*, 6
 - hydrogenes*, 8
 - mesentericus vulgatus*, respira-
tion intensity of, 37
 - pantotrophus*, 8
 - phosphorescens*, 7
- Bacteria, respiration of, 6-8,
37
- Baker, D., 148
- banana, respiration of, 45
- Bandurski, R. S., 119, 123, 156,
158, 175-6
- Barbour, R. D., 160
- Barcroft, J., 12
- Barker, J., 62, 66, 69, 79
- barley, acetaldehyde in, 101
 - anaerobic respiration of, 72-3,
77-9
- asparagine in starved leaves of,
26-7
- carboxylase in, 128
 - effect of oxygen concentration
on respiration of seedlings
of, 61
 - enzymes in mitochondria of
embryo of, 174-5
 - pyruvic acid in, 129
 - respiration during germina-
tion of, 39, 41-2
 - in phosphorus-deficient, 128
 - respiratory quotient of grains
of, 21
 - of starved leaves of, 26-7
 - terminal oxidases in, 151-3
- Barnell, H. R., 39
- Barnett, R. C., 156, 158
- Barron, E. S. S., 79, 127, 146
- Bartholomew, E. T., 27
- Basford, R. E., 139

INDEX

- bean, black valentine, mitochondria of, 175
- broad, *see Vicia faba*
- mung, *see Vigna sesquipedalis*
- soya, heating of, in storage, 177
- lipoxidase in 137
- Beck, L. V., 121
- beet, triosephosphate dehydrogenase in leaves of, 123
- beetroot, effect of organic acids on respiration of, 170
- effect of salts on respiration of, 67
- effect of wounding on respiration, of, 70
- Pasteur effect in, 91, 163
- respiratory quotient of, 28, 170
- Beevers, H., 42, 61, 153, 159-60
- Beggiatoa, 7
- Begonia, respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
- Bellamy, F., 74
- Bendall, D. S., 153
- Bennet-Clark, T. A., 67, 170-1
- Bennett, E., 129
- Bennett, J. P., 27
- benzene, effect of, on respiration, 83
- Bexon, D., 67, 170-1
- Bhavgat, K., 174
- Biale, J. B., 44
- blackberry, anaerobic respiration of, 88
- isocitric acid in, 145
- Blackman, F. F., 26, 44-6, 53, 61, 85-8, 90, 165-9, 171
- Bloom, B., 159
- Böhm, J., 70
- Bonner, J., 119, 128-9, 145-6, 151, 175-6
- Bonnier, G., 11-12, 21, 25, 48
- Boswell, J. G., 92, 148-50, 152
- Bramley's Seedling apple, extinction point for, 94
- respiration of, 44-6, 61-2, 85-88, 165-9
- Brassica napus*, anaerobic respiration of, 84
- Briggs, G. E., 38, 42-3
- broad bean, *see Vicia faba*
- Brown, A. H., 56, 151
- Brown, J. W., 31
- Brown, R. G., 91
- Bryophyllum*, direct oxidation pathway in leaves of, 160
- isocitric acid in, 145
- Buchner, E., 114
- buckwheat, *see Fagopyrum*
- Buhler, D. R., 160
- bulb of *Narcissus poeticus*, respiratory quotient of, 32
- bulky organs, respiration in, 29-30, 91-3
- Bunting, A. H., 129
- Burström, H., 66-7
- butyric bacteria, 7
- cabbage, ascorbic acid oxidase in, 135
- Cactaceae, respiration of, 29
- Caldwell, J., 61
- Cannabis sativa*, anaerobic respiration of, 84
- chemical changes during germination of seeds of, 23-4
- Cannizzaro reaction, 116, 125
- cantaloupe fruit, 6-phosphogluconate dehydrogenase in, 158
- Cantharellus cibatus*, anaerobic respiration of, 84
- Capsicum annuum* fruits, mitochondria of, 175
- respiration intensity of, 44
- carbohydrate as respiratory substrate, 10, 16-23, 49, 75, 77, 88-9, 104-5, 163, 167-8
- carbon dioxide concentration, effect of, on respiration, 33, 62-6
- carbon dioxide zymasis, 94
- carbon monoxide as inhibitor of enzyme actions, 134-6, 138
- as inhibitor of respiration, 149-50, 152
- carbonic anhydrase, 130, 138
- carboxylase, 101, 106, 116, 125, 128-9, 146, 154
- carpels, respiration intensity of, 38
- carrot leaves, terminal oxidase in, 150-1
- root, anaerobic respiration of, 60, 88
- direct oxidation pathway in, 160

INDEX

- carrot root, effect of inhibitors
 - on aerobic and anaerobic respiration of, 103, 150-1
 - effect of oxygen concentration on respiration intensity of, 60-1
 - effect of oxygen concentration on respiratory quotient of, 32-3
 - effect of salts on respiration intensity of, 67
 - effect of wounding on respiration of, 70
 - internal atmosphere of, 92
 - Pasteur effect in, 91, 163
 - terminal oxidase in, 150
- Carthamnus tinctorius*, respiration path of, in relation to rust infection, 160
- castor oil, *see* *Ricinus*
- catalase, 130, 137
- catechol oxidase (catecholase), 132-3, 147-53
- cauliflower, mitochondria of, 175
- centrifugation, differential, 173-174
- Cereus macrogonus*, respiration intensity of, 37
- cherry fruit, anaerobic respiration of, 88
- cherry laurel leaves, effect of carbon dioxide concentration on respiration of, 62-3
- effect of chloroform on respiration of, 68
- effect of mechanical stimulation on respiration of, 69-70
- effect of temperature on respiration of, 53
- respiratory quotient of, 19
- Chlorella*, effect of Krebs cycle acids on respiration of, 146
- respiration of, in light and darkness, 55-6
- chloroform, effect of, on respiration, 68
- Chodat, R., 132
- Choudhury, J. K., 59, 61, 88, 91
- Chow, C. T., 44
- Christian, W., 121
- Chrysanthemum*, respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
- Chudiakov, N. V., 72
- cis*-aconitic acid, 139, 141
- citric acid (and citrate), 139-41, 145-6, 170, 172
- Citrus* fruits, climacteric rise in, 45
- Clausen, H., 53
- climacteric rise, 45
- coccarboxylase, 125, 139-40
- coenzyme 1, 114, 122-3, 125-6, 129, 131, 139, 142-4, 146, 152
- coenzyme 2, 123, 131, 141, 145, 155-6
- coenzyme A, 129, 139-40, 142, 145
- Cohen, C., 97
- combustion and respiration, 16-17
- condensing enzyme, 140
- Conn, E. E., 156, 158, 175
- copper enzymes, 133, 136, 153
- Cori ester, 120
- cotton, citric acid in, 145
- Coulthard, C. E., 136
- course of aerobic respiration, 127-58
 - of anaerobic respiration and fermentation, 113-27
- cozymase, *see* coenzyme 1
- Crassuaceae, respiration of, 29
- Crenothrix polyspora*, 8
- Cruickshank, W., 72
- Cucumis* (cucumber) fruit, direct oxidation pathway in, 160
- glucose-6-phosphate dehydrogenase in, 155, 158
- Cucurbita*, anaerobic respiration of, 77, 84, 88-90
- effect of wounding on respiration of, 70
- internal atmosphere of fruits of, 92
- cyanide as inhibitor of enzyme actions, 134-8, 149-50, 153
- as inhibitor of respiration, 67, 149-53
- cysteamine, 139
- cytochrome, 131, 134-5, 142-4, 149-50, 153, 174
- oxidase, 132, 134-5, 137, 142-143, 147, 149-54, 174
- reductase, 143
- Czerny, F., 97

INDEX

- Daly, J. M., 160
 Damodaran, M., 145
 dandelion root, enzymes in mitochondria of, 174-5
 Das, V. S. R., 173
 Davis, E. A., 55
 De Boer, S. R., 18-19
 De Busk, B. G., 139
 decarboxylase, *see* carboxylase
 decarboxylation, 116, 125, 129, 139, 141-2, 171
 dehydrogenases, 130-1
 dehydroxyascorbic acid, 136
 Demoussy, E., 18-19
 Denny, F. E., 57-8, 66, 92
 Dent, K. W., 28, 77, 88, 91, 170
 desiccation, effect of, on respiration, 46-7
 Detmer, W., 23-4
 Devaux, H., 92
 development, respiration intensity during, 39-50
 Diakanov, N. W., 99-100
 diethyldithiocarbamate as inhibitor of enzyme actions and respiration, 153
 differential centrifugation, 173
 dihydroxyacetone, 115
 phosphate, 121
 diphosphoglyceric acid, 122-4, 126, 177
 diphosphopyridine nucleotide, *see* coenzyme 1
 direct oxidation pathway, 104, 154-60, 164, 175
 disaccharides, utilization of, in respiration, 104
 dissimilation, 1-2
 'diurnal respiration', 4
 Dixon, M., 123-4
 DPN, *see* coenzyme 1

 Eaton, F. M., 145
 El Saifi, A. F., 79
 Elliott, D. C., 153-4
Elodea, absence of anaerobic respiration in, 100
 Embden, G., 117
 Embden-Meyerhof-Parnas (EMP) pathway, 117-26, 155, 158-60, 164, 175

 energy, release of, in respiration, 1, 6-9, 15-17, 36, 80-2, 176-179
 utilization of, in respiration, 8-9, 172-3, 179
 enolase, 124
 environmental factors and respiration, 50-69
 Eny, D. M., 146
 enzymes concerned in fermentation and respiration, 17, 96-7, 105-6, 114-17, 119-158, 164-5, 167, 171, 174-7
 oxidizing, 130-8
 Ergle, D. R., 145
 ether, effect of, on respiration, 68, 83
 ethyl alcohol (ethanol), effect of, on respiration, 83
 in fruits, 93-4
 production of, in anaerobic respiration, 74-80, 91, 93-4
 Euler, H., 114
 exchange of gases in respiration, 1-5, 9-36
 external factors in respiration, 50-71, 82-3
 extinction point, 57-60, 94, 161-2

 factors, external, in respiration, 50-71, 82-3
 internal, in respiration, 46-50
 facultative anaerobes, 7
Fagopyrum, anaerobic respiration of germinating seeds of, 88-90
 fat seeds, respiratory quotient during germination of, 21-23, 29
 respiratory quotient during maturation of, 29
 fats as substrate for respiration, 18-24, 88-9, 104-5
 Fenn, W. O., 12
 fermentation, alcoholic, 6, 74, 96-8, 113-27, 144, 178
 (anaerobic respiration), 6, 56-60, 72-94, 161-9, 178-9
 Fernandes, D. S., 39-41, 51-2, 54, 81-2
 ferrous iron, utilization of, in respiration, 8

INDEX

- Fidler, J. C., 78, 93-4, 161, 169
 flavin (and flavoprotein), 131, 143-4, 153
 flax, *see* *Linum usitatissimum*
 'floating respiration', 26, 49, 63
 flowers, respiration of, 4, 38, 43, 153-4
 Folkes, B. F., 39
Fontinalis, respiration of, 68
 food reserve in seeds, 20, 24, 88-9
 Forward, D. F., 39, 61, 77
 Franck, J., 64
 Fritz, G. J., 137
 fructose as respiratory substrate, 45, 104
 constitution of, 109-10
 fructose-1,6-phosphate, 112-15, 120, 128-9, 157, 178
 fructose-6-phosphate, 120, 128, 178
 fruit, alcohol and aldehyde in, 92-4
 internal atmosphere of, 92
 Pasteur effect in, 161, 163, 165-9, 172
 zymasis in, 92-4
 Fujii, R., 80
 fumaric acid, 139, 142-4, 146, 172
 dehydrogenase (fumarase), 139, 143, 145
 fungal infection, effect of, on respiration pathway, 160
 fungi, anaerobic respiration of, 76-7, 97
 respiration of, on different media, 18, 99
 respiratory quotients of, 18
 furan, 109
 furanose sugars, 108-12
 garden pea, *see* *Pisum sativum*
 Garreau, 4
 gaseous exchange, 1-5, 64
 Geddes, W. F., 177
 geotropic curvature and respiration, 70
 Gerber, C., 29, 93
 Gerhart, A. R., 53
 germinating seeds, anaerobic respiration of, 88-91
 germination, oxygen necessary for, 3
 germination, respiration intensity during, 39-42
 respiratory quotient during, 19-26
 Gibbs, M., 123, 158-60
 Girton, R. E., 78, 161, 164
Gladiolus corms, internal atmosphere of, 64-5, 92
 respiration of, 64-5
 glucose as respiratory substrate, 104
 constitution of, 107-9
 oxidase, 103, 136-7
 glucose-1-phosphate, 105, 112, 120, 128
 glucose-6-phosphate, 112, 119-120, 128, 155, 158, 164, 178
 dehydrogenase, 155, 158, 164
 glutamic acid, 172
 glutamine, 172
 glyceraldehyde, 115-16
 glyceraldehyde-3-phosphate, 121
 glycerol production during fermentation, 116-17
 glycollic acid, 172
 glycolysis, 115, 130, 138, 155, 161, 165, 167-8
 glycosides, utilization of, in respiration, 105
 Goddard, D. R., 32-3, 60, 91, 129, 150-1
 Godlewski, E., 75, 77
 Gottschalk, A., 97
 Gramineae, food reserves in seeds of, 20
 grape, anaerobic respiration of, 84, 88
 wild, respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
 Greiner, C. M., 158
 Griffiths, D. G., 45
 guaiaconic acid, 132
 guaiacum gum, 132
 guava, Pasteur effect in, 163
 Gustafson, F. G., 45, 65, 94
 Guthrie, J. D., 145
 gynaeceum, respiration intensity of, 38
 Hackett, D. P., 151, 153-4
 Hackney, F. M. V., 150, 152
 haematin, 131-2, 134
 Hanes, C. S., 66, 120-1, 128

INDEX

- Harden, A., 112, 114, 120
 Hardy, M. B., 65
 haricot, respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
 Harrington, G. T., 20, 31
 Hartree, E. F., 137
 Haworth, W. N., 107
 Heard, C. R. C., 128
 heat, evolution of, in respiration, 4, 8, 17, 176-7
 Heath, O. V. S., 64
Helianthus annuus, anaerobic respiration of, 77, 84, 88-90
 direct oxidation pathway in, 160
 respiration intensity of, during development, 38-9, 42-3
 triosephosphate dehydrogenase in leaves of, 123
 hemicelluloses, utilization of, in respiration, 104-5
 hemp, chemical changes during germination of seeds of, 23-4
Heracleum giganteum, anaerobic respiration of, 84
 heterohexoses, 167-8
 hexokinase, 119, 155, 176
 hexose as respiratory substrate, 17-18, 104-6
 diphosphate, *see* fructose-1,6-phosphate
 monophosphates, 114, 128, 156-7, 165
 hexosemonophosphate shunt, *see* direct oxidation pathway
 hexuronic acid, *see* ascorbic acid
 Hill, G. R., 88
 Hill, R., 153, 174
Hillhousia, 7
 Hirschfeld, A., 119
 Hopkins, E. F., 70
 Horecker, B. L., 156, 158
 horse-radish, peroxidases of, 131-2
 Howard, F. D., 44
 Hübner, E., 97
 Huennekens, F. M., 139
Hydnum repandum, anaerobic respiration of, 84
Hydrangea otaksa, effect of carbon dioxide concentration on respiration of leaves of, 64
 hydrocyanic acid, *see* cyanide
 zymesis, 94
 hydrogen, utilization of, in respiration, 8
 hydrogen bacteria, 8
 sulphide, utilization of, in respiration, 7
Hydrogenomonas, 8
 hydroxylamine as inhibitor of catalase, 137
 Inamdar, R. S., 48
 indophenol oxidase, 132, 135
 Ingen-Housz, J., 3
 inhibitors of enzyme actions, 69, 103, 129, 134-8, 148-50, 153
 of respiration, 69, 148-53
 inorganic salts, effect of, on respiration, 66-8
 intensity of respiration, 34-71
 intermediates in respiration, 97, 101-2, 115-17, 119-30, 138-146, 155-8
 internal factors in respiration, 46-50
 'intramolecular respiration', 73
 inulase, 105
 inulin, utilization of, in respiration, 104
 iodoacetic acid (and iodoacetate) as inhibitor of respiration, 138
 (and iodoacetate) as inhibitor of triosephosphate dehydrogenase, 128, 138
 (and iodoacetate) as inhibitor of zymase, 103
 ionized air, effect of, on respiration, 66
 iron bacteria, 8
 catalysis system, 67
 enzymes, 131, 135, 137, 153
 Irving, A. A., 68
 isocitric acid, 139, 141, 145-6
 dehydrogenase, 139, 141, 145
 Ivanov, L., 98
 Ivanov, N., 98
 ivy, respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
 James, A. L., 21, 39, 41
 James, G. M., 128-9

INDEX

- James, W. O., 21, 39, 41-2, 61, 101, 128-9, 136, 138, 146, 151-4, 171, 173-4
- Jang, R., 156, 158
- Jensen, P., Boysen, 75, 84-5, 88, 102-3
- Jerusalem artichoke tubers, effect of oxygen concentration on respiration of, 58-61
- Pasteur effect in, 91, 163
- Jönsson, B., 47-8
- Karczag, L., 115, 125
- Karslen, A., 83
- katharometer, 12
- Keilin, D., 134-5, 137
- Kermack, W. O., 123
- α -ketoglutaric acid, 139, 141-2, 145-6, 172
- dehydrogenase, 139
- ketoses, constitution of, 109-10
- Kidd, F., 38, 42-6, 55, 62-5
- Kiessling, W., 124
- Klein, G., 101
- Klein, R. M., 79, 127, 146
- Klenow, H., 156, 158
- Kobel, M., 129
- Kosinski, I., 66
- Kostychev, S. (Kostytschew, S.), 37, 73, 75, 77, 97, 100-2, 104, 138
- Kraus, G., 176
- Krebs cycle, 139-47, 154-5, 158, 164, 171-2, 174-5
- Kuijper, J., 54
- laccase, 133
- Lactarius piperatus*, anaerobic respiration of, 84
- lactic acid production from pyruvic acid, 172
- in anaerobic respiration, 79-80, 115, 126-7
- lactic bacteria, 7
- dehydrogenase, 127
- Laine, I., 145
- Lamarck, J. B., 4, 176
- Lathyrus odoratus*, anaerobic respiration of germinating seeds of, 88-90
- respiration of, during germination, 40-1
- Lavatera olbia*, respiration intensity of various organs of, 38
- Lavoisier, A. L., 3
- Leach, W., 77, 88, 164, 170, 177
- Leavenworth, C. S., 27
- leaves, effect of wounding on respiration of, 70
- 'floating' and 'protoplasmic' respiration of, 26
- respiration intensity of, 38, 43
- respiratory quotients of, 18-19, 26-7, 30-1
- Lechartier, G., 74
- Leguminosae, food reserves in seeds of, 20
- Leonard, E. R., 45
- lettuce, mitochondria in, 175
- Levy, H., 149
- lichens, resistance of, to desiccation, 47
- Liebig, J. v., 4
- light, effect of, on respiration, 55-6
- Ligustrum vulgare*, anaerobic respiration of, 84
- lilac, *see Syringa*
- lily, respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
- lime fruit, direct oxidation pathway in, 160
- Link, G. K. K., 79, 127, 146
- linseed, *see Linum usitatissimum*
- Linum usitatissimum*, respiratory quotient during germination of seeds of, 21-3, 25, 29
- respiratory quotient during maturation of seeds of, 29
- lipase, 105
- Lipmann, F., 118
- α -lipoic acid, 139-40
- lipoxidase, 137
- Livingston, E., 63
- location of respiratory enzymes, 173-6
- Locklin, H. D., 65
- Lohmann, K., 118, 120-1
- lucerne, phosphoribose isomerase in, 158
- Lundegårdh, H., 66-7, 153
- Lundsgaard, E., 103

INDEX

- Lupinus albus*, respiration intensity of, 37
luteus, anaerobic respiration of, 84
 chemical changes in seeds of, during germination, 24
 respiratory quotient of seedlings of, 25
 sp., effect of temperature on respiration of seedlings of, 53
 location of respiratory enzymes in, 175
 Lyon, C. J., 98, 100
 McCall, E. R., 145
 Machlis, L., 151
 Magness, J. R., 92
Mahonia, respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
 Maige, A., 66
 Maige, G., 38-9
 maize, *see* *Zea mays*
 malic acid (and malate) as respiratory substrate, 78
 (and malate) in respiration, 139, 143, 145, 147, 169-72, 174-5
 (and malate) in succulents, 29
 dehydrogenase, 139, 143, 145, 147
 malonic acid, 172
 Malpighi, M., 3
 maltase, 105
Mammillaria eliphatidens, respiration intensity of, 37
 manganese catalysis system, 67
 Mangin, L., 11-12, 21, 25, 48
 mango, Pasteur effect in, 163
 mangold, Pasteur effect in, 163
 manometric methods, 11-12
 Mapson, L. W., 62
 Maquenne, L., 18-19, 101
 Marsh, P. B., 32-3, 60, 91, 150
 Matthaei, G. L. C., 53
 maturation of linseed, respiratory quotient during, 29
 Mayer, A., 39
 measurement of respiration, 9-13
 mechanical stimulation, effect of, on respiration, 69-70
 mechanism of respiration, 95-179
 Meeuse, B. J. D., 129
 β -mercaptoethylamine, 139
 meristems, respiration intensity of, 37-8
 Merry, J., 151
Mesembryanthemum, respiration of, 29
deltoides, respiration intensity of, 37
 methyl glyoxal, 115-16
 Meyerhof, O., 117, 119, 121, 124, 165, 170
 Michel, B. E., 79, 127, 146
 micro-eudiometers, 11
 microsomes, 173-4
 Millerd, A., 119, 175-6
 mitochondria, 146, 173-6
Mnium undulatum, effect of water content on respiration of, 47-8
 Mohl, H. v., 4
 moniodoacetic acid, *see* iodoacetic acid
 monophenol oxidase, 133
 monophosphoglyceric acid, 124
 Morgan, E. J., 129
 mosses, effect of water content on respiration of, 47
 Müller, D., 103, 136
 Müller-Thurgau, H., 54
 mung bean, *see* *Vigna sesquipedalis*
 mustard, white, effect of carbon dioxide concentration on respiration of seedlings of, 62-3
 Myrbäck, K., 114
 Nabokich, A. J., 75
 Nägeli, C., 98
 Nair, K. R., 145
 Nance, J. P. (*see also* Phillips, J. W.), 77
Narcissus poeticus, respiratory quotient of bulb of, 32
 Neal, M. J., 78, 161, 164
 Needham, D., 123
 Nelson, J. M., 148
 Neuberg, C., 97, 115-17, 125, 129
 Newton Wonder apple, extinction point for, 94
 Nicolas, M. G., 30-1, 66

INDEX

- nitrating bacteria, 7
- nitrifying bacteria, 7
- nitrites, utilization of, in respiration, 7
- Nitrobacter*, 7
- 4-nitrocatechol as inhibitor of catechol oxidase, 149
- Nitrococcus*, 7
- Nitrosomonas*, 7
- 'nocturnal respiration', 4
- Norval, I. F., 101, 128
- notatin, 136
- oak, *see* *Quercus*
- oat coleoptile, effect of Krebs cycle acids on oxygen uptake by, 146
- effect of pyruvate on respiration of, 129
- hexose phosphates in, 128
- terminal oxidase in, 151
- obligate anaerobes, 6
- Ogur, M., 119
- Oleander*, respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
- Olney, A. J., 45
- onion, pyruvic acid in, 129
- bulb, effect of carbon dioxide concentration on respiration of, 65
- root tip, terminal oxidase in, 151
- Onoclea sensibilis*, carbonic anhydrase in, 138
- Oota, Y., 80
- optimum temperature for respiration, 52
- Opuntia*, respiratory quotient of, 29
- orange fruit, direct oxidation pathway in, 160
- Pasteur effect in, 161
- organic acids, formation of, 172
- in anthocyanin-containing leaves, 30
- in respiration, 29-31, 56, 78-80, 170
- in succulent plants, 29-30
- organic substances, effect of, on respiration, 68-9, 83
- 'organization resistance', 45-6
- Orobancha ramosa*, anaerobic respiration of, 84
- Overholser, E. L., 65
- oxalic acid in *Mesembryanthemum*, 29
- oxaloacetic acid, 139-40, 143, 145-7, 171, 173
- carboxylase, 146
- oxalosuccinic acid, 139, 141
- carboxylase, 139, 141, 145
- oxidases, 130-7, 144-5, 147
- oxidation processes in respiration, 5-10, 16-17, 19, 23-7, 30, 127, 138-73, 177-9
- oxidative anabolism, 165-73
- glycolysis pathway, *see* direct oxidation pathway
- oxidizing enzymes, 130-58, 173-176
- oxygen, effect of high pressures of, on respiration, 61-2
- concentration, effect of, on respiration intensity, 56-62, 161-2, 165-8
- effect of, on respiratory quotient, 31-3
- necessary for seed germination, 3
- poisoning, 61-2
- respiration, *see* aerobic respiration
- oxygenase, 132
- paeony, effect of water content on respiration of, 47
- Palladin, V. I., 2, 5, 13, 66, 77, 101
- pantothenic acid, 139
- Papaver*, respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
- rhoeas*, respiration intensity of various organs of, 38
- Parija, P., 44, 85, 168
- parsley, direct oxidation pathway in, 160
- 6-phosphogluconate dehydrogenase in leaves of, 158
- parsnip roots, Pasteur effect in, 91
- 6-phosphogluconate dehydrogenase in, 158
- Pasteur, L., 74
- Pasteur effect, 91, 161-5
- Pazur, J. H., 160
- pea, garden, *see* *Pisum sativum*
- peach, respiration of fruit of, 45

INDEX

- pear, effect of carbon dioxide concentration on respiration of, 65
 respiration of fruit of, 45-6
 respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
Peltandrum virginica, respiration of spadix of, 153-4
Penicillium glaucum, aerobic and anaerobic respiration of, 103
notatum, glucose oxidase in, 136
resticulosum, glucose oxidase in, 136
 pentose phosphate pathway (or pentose shunt), *see* direct oxidation pathway
 pentoses, constitution of, 110-11
Pentstemon gentianoides, respiration intensity of various organs of, 38
 pepper, *see* *Capsicum annuum*
 peptone as substrate in anaerobic respiration, 77
 periodicity, seasonal, relation of respiration to, 48-50
 peroxidases, 130-3, 137
 petals, respiration intensity of, 38, 44
 Pettenkofer tubes, 13
 Pfeffer, W., 2, 5, 9, 73, 83-4, 98-9, 102, 104, 138
 Pflüger, E., 73, 98
Phaseolus aureus, hexokinase in, 119
 mitochondria in seedlings of, 175
 phenolase, 133
 Phillips, J. W. (*see also* Nance, J. P.), 79
Philodendron grandifolium, respiration in spadix of, 153-154
 phosphate bonds, energy rich, 118, 120, 124, 177-9
 phosphoenolpyruvic acid, 124
 phosphoglucosmutase, 120
 6-phosphogluconate, 155-6, 158
 dehydrogenase, 155-6, 158
 phosphoglyceric acid (and phosphoglycerate), 117, 120, 122-4, 128-9, 138
 phosphoglyceric aldehyde, 121-123, 156, 177-8
 phosphokinase, 123
 phosphoglyceromutase, 124
 phosphohexose isomerase, 120, 164
 kinase, 120
 phosphokinases, 123
 phosphopyruvic acid, 138
 phosphoribose isomerase, 156, 158
 phosphoric acid (and phosphate), part played in fermentation and respiration by, 97-8, 114-15, 117-25, 128, 177-8
 phosphorylase, 105, 120
 phosphorylated hexose, 117, 168
 phosphorylation, 115, 117, 119-120, 124, 155, 177-9
 phosphotriose isomerase, 121
Photinia glabra, respiratory quotients of green and red leaves of, 31
Phycomyces, respiratory quotients of, 18-19
Pinus lambertiana, mitochondria in seeds and seedlings of, 175
 Pirschle, K., 101
Pisum sativum, alcohol dehydrogenase in, 126
 anaerobic respiration of germinating seeds of, 75, 81-3, 97
 direct oxidation pathway in, 160
 effect of high oxygen pressures on respiration of, 62
 effect of temperature on respiration of seedlings of, 51-4, 81-3
 effect of water content on respiration of, 47
 enolase in, 124
 enzymes in mitochondria of, 175
 fructose-1,6-diphosphate from, 120-1, 128
 glucose-6-phosphate dehydrogenase in, 155
 α -ketoglutaric acid in, 145
 oxaloacetic acid in, 145

INDEX

- Pisum sativum*, phosphoglyceric phosphokinase in, 123
 phosphorylase in, 120
 pyruvic phosphokinase in, 125
 respiration intensity of seeds and seedlings of, 39-40
 respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
 of seedlings of, 32
 terminal oxidase in stems of, 151
 triosephosphate dehydrogenase in, 122-3
 triosephosphate isomerase in, 121
 plasmolysis and respiration, 66
 Platenius, H., 27
 plum, respiration of fruit of, 45
 poisons, effect of, on respiration, 68-9
 pollination and respiration, 70
 polyphenol oxidase, 132-3
 polysaccharides, utilization of, in respiration, 104-5
 Polzeniusz, F., 75, 77
 poplar flowers, acetaldehyde in, 97
 poppy, *see Papaver*
 potato tuber, anaerobic respiration of, 59, 75, 79
 citric acid in, 145
 effect of carbon dioxide concentration on respiration of, 65
 effect of catechol on respiration of, 148
 effect of handling on respiration of, 69
 effect of high oxygen pressures on respiration of, 62
 effect of oxygen concentration on respiration of, 58-61
 effect of oxygen concentration on sprouting of, 64
 effect of salts on respiration of, 67
 effect of sugar concentration on respiration of, 66
 effect of temperature on respiration of, 54-5
 effect of water content on respiration of, 47
 potato tuber, effect of wounding on respiration of, 70
 internal atmosphere of, 92
 lactic acid in, 79, 126
 lactic dehydrogenase in, 127
 oxidation of Krebs cycle acids by, 146
 phosphorylase in, 120
 respiratory quotient of, 27
 terminal oxidases in, 147-51
 Potter, N. A., 45
 Pratt, H. K., 45
 pressure of oxygen, effect of, on respiration, 61-2
 Preston, C., 67
 Prianischnikov, D., 24
 Priestley, J., 3
 privet, respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
 protease, 106
 proteins, oxidation products of, 25-6, 106
 as respiratory substrate, 24-28, 104-6
 'protoplasmic respiration', 26, 49, 63
Prunus cerasifolia, respiratory quotients of green and red leaves of, 31
Pteris tremula, mitochondria in, 175
 Pucher, G. W., 27, 145
 Purievitch, K. (Puriewitsch, K.), 18
 pyran, 108
 pyranose sugars, 107-11, 167
 pyruvic acid (and pyruvate) in barley, 129
 in fermentation and respiration, 115-17, 124-5, 127-30, 138-9, 143-7, 154-5, 171-4
 in onion, 129
 pyruvic aldehyde, 115-16
 phosphokinase, 125
 Quartley, C. E., 62
Quercus spp., respiratory quotients of acorns of, 31
 quinic acid as substrate for *Aspergillus*, 37
 quotient, respiratory, 17-34, 57, 89-90, 170

INDEX

- radioactive substances, effect of, on respiration, 66
- radish root, effect of oxygen concentration on respiration of, 58
- Ramstad, P. E., 177
- Raphiolepis ovata*, respiratory quotients of green and red leaves of, 31
- reductase, 143, 152
- Reed, L. J., 139
- 'reserve cellulose', utilization of, in respiration, 104-5
- reserve food in seeds, 20, 24
- resorcinol as inhibitor of catechol oxidase and respiration, 150
- respiration intensity, 34-71
- respiratory index, 38-9, 42-3
- quotient, 17-34, 57, 89-90, 170
- substrate, 5-8, 10, 16-28, 33-4, 36, 45, 49, 95-6, 104-13, 179
- rhubarb, respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
- Rhus* spp., laccase in, 133
- ribose-5-phosphate, 156, 158
- ribulose-5-phosphate, 155-6
- rice seedlings, effect of oxygen concentration on respiration of 60
- terminal oxidase in, 151
- Richards, F. J., 128
- Richards, H. M., 70
- Ricinus*, anaerobic respiration of, 77, 88-90
- mitochondria in seeds of, 42, 175
- oxidative activity of mitochondria in germinating seeds of, 42
- respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
- ripening of linseed, respiratory quotient during, 29
- Rischavi, L., 39
- Robertson, R. N., 67-8
- rose, respiration intensity of petals of, 44
- respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
- Rosenberg, L. L., 123
- Roux, E. R., 45
- Sachs, J. v., 2, 4-5, 74, 98
- safflower, respiration path in, as a result of rust infection, 160
- salt respiration, 68
- Saltman, P., 119, 176
- salts, effect of, on respiration, 66-8
- Saussure, T. de, 3-4, 9, 39, 62
- Sayre, R. M., 160
- Schade, A. L., 149-51
- Scheele, C. W., 3
- Scheiderman, H. A., 151
- Scheloumow, A., 97
- Schneider-Orelli, O., 54
- seasonal periodicity, relation of respiration to, 48-50
- sedoheptulose, 158
- sedoheptulose-7-phosphate, 156
- Sedum dendroideum*, respiration intensity of, 37
- spectabile*, sedoheptulose in, 158
- seedlings, course of respiration during development of, 39-42
- effect of temperature on respiration of, 51-3
- seeds, food reserves of, 20, 24
- germinating, anaerobic respiration of, 88-91
- oxygen necessary for germination of, 2-3
- respiration intensity during germination of, 39-42, 47-8
- respiration intensity during maturation of, 47
- respiratory quotient during germination of, 19-26
- respiratory quotient during maturation of, 29
- Seifrizz, W., 75
- Seifter, E., 145
- senescence, respiration during, 44-6, 58-9
- sepals, respiration intensity of, 38
- shade plants, respiration intensity of, 37
- Siegelman, H. W., 44
- Sinapis alba*, anaerobic respiration of, 84-5, 103
- Singh, B. N., 48
- skunk cabbage, respiration of spadix of, 153

INDEX

- Slater, W. G., 171
 Smyrniotis, P. Z., 156, 158
 Snow, D., 177
 sorrel, respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
 soya bean, heating of, in storage, 177
 lipoxidase in, 137
 spadix of Araceae, respiration of, 153-4
 spinach, glucose-6-phosphate dehydrogenase in, 155
 mitochondria of, 175
 phosphoribose isomerase in leaves of, 158
 protein as respiratory substrate in, 27
 transketolase in leaves of, 156, 158
 triosephosphate dehydrogenase in leaves of, 123
 spinach beet leaves, glucose-6-phosphate dehydrogenase in, 158
 phosphogluconic dehydrogenase in, 158
 spindle tree, respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
Spirophyllum ferrugineum, 8
 Spoehr, H. A., 13
 Stafford, H. A., 156, 158, 174-175
 stages in aerobic respiration, 139-58
 in fermentation and anaerobic respiration, 119-27
 stamens, respiration intensity of, 38
 Stanley, R. G., 175
 starch, utilization of, in fermentation and respiration, 104-5, 120
 starved leaves, respiration of, 26-7, 66
 Stenlid, G., 151
 Stetten, D., 159
 Stetten, M. R., 159
 Steward, F. C., 67
 Stich, C., 31-2, 70
 Stiles, W., 28, 91
 stimulation, effect of, on respiration, 69-70
 Stoklasa, J., 79, 97
 stomatal opening, effect of, on respiration, 64
 strawberry fruits, effect of carbon dioxide concentration on respiration of, 65
 effect of temperature on respiration of, 54
 streaming of protoplasm, 9
 Stumpf, P. K., 121-2, 124-6
 substrate for respiration, 5-8, 10, 16-28, 34, 36, 45, 49, 95-6, 99-101, 104-13
 succinic acid (and succinate), 139, 142, 144-6, 170, 172, 175
 dehydrogenase, 139, 142, 145, 175
 succulent plants, respiration of, 29-30, 37, 91
 sucrose, 105
 sucrose, utilization of, in respiration, 66, 104-5
 sugar as respiratory substrate, 16-20, 36, 45-6, 99
 sugar beet, triosephosphate dehydrogenase in leaves of, 123
 sugar concentration, effect of, on respiration, 66
 sugars, constitution of, 107-11
 sulphide as inhibitor of enzyme actions, 134-5, 137-8
 sulphonic acids, aromatic, as inhibitors of carboxylase, 129
 sulphur bacteria, 7
 sunflower, *see Helianthus annuus*
 Sunobe, Y., 80
 swede, terminal oxidase in, 152
 sweet pea, *see Lathyrus odoratus*
Symplocarpus foetidus, respiration of spadix of, 153
Syringa flowers, effect of temperature on respiration of, 53
 leaves, respiratory quotient of, 19
 Szent-Györgyi, A., 135
 Tankó, B., 121, 128
 Taylor, D. L., 60, 151

INDEX

- temperature, effect of, on anaerobic respiration, 81-3
 effect of, on respiration intensity, 45-6, 50-5, 81-3
 effect of, on respiratory quotient, 30-1
 coefficient of respiration, 53, 82
 terminal oxidases, 145, 147-54
 testa, influence of, on respiration, 40-1, 64, 91
 Theorell, H., 131
 thermophile bacteria, 7
 thiamine, 125
Thiobacillus, 7
 thiosulphate bacteria, 7
Thiothrix, 7
 Thomas, M., 6, 92-4
 Thornton, N. C., 64-5, 92
 Thunberg, T., 12
 time factor, 51-3
 TNP, *see* coenzyme 2
 tobacco, respiratory quotient of
 leaves of, 19
 terminal oxidase in roots of, 151
 triosephosphate dehydrogenase in leaves of, 123
 utilization of amino acids in starved leaves of, 27
 tomato fruit, direct oxidation pathway in, 160
 effect of carbon dioxide concentration on respiration of, 65
 Pasteur effect in, 163
 production of alcohol in, 94
 respiration of, 45
 tomato stem, anaerobic respiration of, 79-80
 transaldolase, 156
 transketolase, 156-8
 tricarboxylic acid cycle, *see* Krebs cycle
Trifolium pratense, carbonic anhydrase in, 138
 triosephosphate, 121, 128, 156
 dehydrogenase, 122, 131, 138
 isomerase, 121
 triosis, 115
 triphosphopyridine nucleotide, *see* coenzyme 2
Triticum sativum (*T. vulgare*),
 anaerobic respiration of, 84
 effect of oxygen concentration on respiration of seedlings of, 57-8, 60
 effect of poisons on respiration of, 83
 effect of salts on respiration of seedlings of, 66-7
 effect of temperature on respiration of, 53
 enzymes in mitochondria of embryo of, 174-5
 glucose-6-phosphate dehydrogenase in, 155
 6-phosphogluconate dehydrogenase in, 158
 respiration intensity of, 37, 39
 respiratory quotient during germination of seeds of, 21-3
 respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
 respiratory quotient of seedlings of, 32
 terminal oxidase in embryo and seedlings of, 151
Tropaeolum majus, anaerobic respiration of leaves of, 84-5, 103
 Trout, S. A., 65
 tulip bulb, effect of carbon dioxide concentration on respiration of, 65
 Turner, E. R., 62
 Turner, J. S., 91, 103, 115
 turnip, 6-phosphogluconate dehydrogenase in roots of, 158
 respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
 tyrosinase, 133
 Van't Hoff rule, 53
 Vennesland, B., 146, 156, 158, 171
Verbascum thapsus, respiration of various organs of, 38
Vicia faba, anaerobic respiration of germinating seeds of, 75, 83-4
 effect of wounding on respiration of, 70
 mitochondria in, 174
 respiration intensity of, 37

INDEX

- Vickery, H. B., 27, 145
Vigna sesquipedalis, adenosine triphosphate in, 119
 anaerobic respiration of cotyledons of, 80
 Vignol, M., 37
 vine, respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
 Virtanen, A. I., 145
 vitamin B₁, 125
 vitamin C, *see* ascorbic acid
 Wager, H. G., 47
 Wakeman, A. J., 27
 Walker, D. A., 42
 Wang, C. H., 160
 Wardlaw, C. W., 45
 water content, relation of respiration to, 46-8
 Webster, G. C., 56
 Wehner, O., 68
 West, C., 38, 42-6, 55
 Whatley, F. R., 123, 145
 wheat, *see* *Triticum sativum*
 Wheldale, M., 132
 Whiting, G. C., 92, 148
 Wildman, S. G., 145
 Willis, A. J., 39
 Wortmann, J., 83
 wounding, effect of, on respiration, 70-1
 Wright, H. C., 177
 xanthine oxidase, 137
 Yamaguchi, M., 44
 yeast, anaerobic respiration of, 84
 fermentation, 6, 74, 96-8, 113-27
 Yemm, E. W., 26-7, 39, 106
 Yocum, C. S., 153-4
 Young, R. E., 45
 Young, W. J., 112, 114, 120
 Zaleski, W., 98
Zea mais, anaerobic respiration of germinating seeds of, 88-90
 of roots of, 78
 direct oxidation pathway in leaves of, 160
 Pasteur effect in, 161, 164
 respiratory quotient of leaves of, 19
 of seedlings of, 32
 zymase, 77, 97, 100-3, 114, 165, 167
 zymasis, 6, 93-4
 zymohexase, 121